

# Residency II

Book 10 of *Good Medicine*

by Michael Loucks

Copyright © 2015-2024 Michael P. Loucks

# Сам Себя Издат

First publication date: TBD

First revision publication date: TBD

You may contact the author at: [author@michaelloucks.com](mailto:author@michaelloucks.com)

<https://a-well-lived-life.com/>

Scripture taken from the New King James Version®. Copyright © 1982 by  
Thomas Nelson.

Used by permission. All rights reserved.

*While this story was inspired by actual persons and events, certain characters, characterizations, incidents, locations, and dialog were fictionalized or invented for the purposes of dramatization.*

## Other Books in This Series

*Freshman Year*

*Sophomore Year*

*Junior Year*

*Senior Year*

*Medical School I*

*Medical School II*

*Medical School III*

*Medical School IV*

*Residency I (\*)*

*Residency II (\*)*

\* Work in Progress

## Other Books by Michael Loucks

### A Well-Lived Life, Series I

- Book 1 - Birgit
- Book 2 - Jennifer
- Book 3 - Pia
- Book 4 - Bethany
- Book 5 - Stephanie
- Book 6 - Kara I
- Book 7 - Kara II
- Book 8 - Stephie
- Book 9 - Anala
- Book 10 - The Wife

### A Well-Lived Life, Series 2

- Book 1 - Bethany
- Book 2 - Stephie
- Book 3 - Jessica
- Book 4 - Elyse
- Book 5 - Michelle
- Book 6 - Samantha
- Book 7 - Sakurako
- Book 8 - NIKA
- Book 9 - Kami
- Book 10 - Bridget

### A Well-Lived Life Series 3

- Book 1 - Suzanne
- Book 2 - The Inner Circle
- Book 3 - A New World
- Book 4 - Coming of Age
- Book 5 - The Pumpkin Patch
- Book 6 - The World Turned Upside Down (\*)

### Climbing the Ladder

- Book 01 - The First Rung
- Book 02 - The Second Rung
- Book 03 - Climbing Higher (\*)
- Book 04 - Chutes and Ladders (\*)

*From the Files of Doctor Fran Mercer (\*+)*

### A Sailor's Diary

- Book 1 - The War Years (\*+)

\* Work in Progress

+ Available exclusively on Patreon or BuyMeACoffee

*For Jennifer*

<u>I. And That's When All Hell Broke Loose</u>	<u>1</u>
<u>II. Aftermath</u>	<u>33</u>
<u>III. Appendectomy</u>	<u>63</u>
<u>IV. Loretta, Shelly, and Angie</u>	<u>95</u>
<u>V. Because I Love You</u>	<u>127</u>
<u>VI. Match and Scrambles!</u>	<u>157</u>
<u>VII. An Interview</u>	<u>187</u>
<u>VIII. An Olive Branch</u>	<u>219</u>
<u>IX. Yes or No?</u>	<u>249</u>
<u>X. Dutch Treat</u>	<u>279</u>
<u>XI. All We Can Do Is Hope for the Best</u>	<u>309</u>
<u>XII. Then I Think You Know the Way Forward</u>	<u>337</u>
<u>XIII. I believe it's called a 'Come to Jesus' meeting</u>	<u>365</u>





# I. And That's When All Hell Broke Loose

**February 20, 1990, McKinley, Ohio**

"...and that's when all hell broke loose."

"You didn't see the shooter?" Deputy Kenseth asked.

"Not until later As I said, I was in Trauma 1, treating the seventeen-year-old victim."

"Walk me through what happened next."

"Shelly, that is, Doctor Lindsay, had just left the room when I heard the first shot."

"You knew that immediately?"

"I've been around guns long enough to know a pistol report," I said. "And there is nothing in the ED that would make any similar sound. Deputy Sommers reacted instantly to the sound and ordered all of us to get down."

"Did you do that?"

"Not immediately, because we were treating the patient. When we heard a second gunshot, she ordered us to move behind the trauma table."

"What did you observe?"

"Deputy Sommers crouched, drew her service pistol, and carefully opened the door. Almost immediately, another shot rang out, striking her in the temple. Before I could move, I heard at least five rapid gunshots from at least two guns."

"How do you know it was multiple guns?"

"Different reports," I replied. "I suppose it could be location or echo or whatever, but there were at least two distinct reports."

"What did you do then?"

"I moved to Deputy Sommers while Doctor Nielson attended to the patient on the table."

"Did you see anything that happened in the corridor?"

"No. The door had closed when Deputy Sommers was shot."

"Is there anything else you can tell me about the incident?"

"Not really. I was in Trauma 1 the entire time during which shots were exchanged."

"OK. I think that's all I have for you at the moment. I'll be in touch if I have further questions."

"Thanks."

I got up, left the consultation room, and walked into the corridor. It was 2:12am, and the ED was still closed to trauma, as it was a crime scene. That meant VERY long transport times to Columbus for almost anyone in the area around McKinley.

"Mike, go home," Doctor Cutter said when he saw me. "Your next shift is canceled."

"I can get a few hours of sleep and come back," I said. "Normally, I'd just crash in the on-call room, but my wife is waiting up."

"No. Take the day. I'll call you and let you know when you can see Psych."

"Given my relationship with them, I'd prefer an outside counselor, if you don't mind."

"Did you have someone in mind?"

"Doctor Fran Mercer, in Milford. I've seen her off and on for the past nine years. She's a clinical psychologist."

"OK. Call her first thing in the morning."

"Do I need an assessment to come back to work?"

"You work at the Free Clinic on Wednesdays, right?"

"Yes."

"Do that. I'll speak with Gale Turner, but that's mostly routine physical exams, right? No procedures?"

"Correct. I'm morally opposed to elective abortion, so I don't participate in those procedures."

"OK. You're on the surgical service, so Owen can clear you to perform procedures. Make sure you speak to him tomorrow."

"I will. Thanks, Doctor Cutter."

"Go see your family."

I nodded and went upstairs to the surgical locker room, where I stripped off my scrubs, showered, and dressed in street clothes. Before I left, I touched Shelly's locker, said a silent prayer, and then headed home.



## **February 20, 1990, Circleville, Ohio**

"Hi," I said wearily when I walked into the house at 2:47am on Tuesday morning.

"How are you, Mike?"

"The adrenaline started wearing off in the car on the way home."

"Do you want to go right to bed?"

"As tired as I am, I don't think I could sleep right now. I'm going to make some chamomile tea."

"There's hot water in the kettle," Kris said. "I thought you might want some. Is there more news?"

I sighed, "Yes, but none of it good."

I put loose tea in a tea ball and set it in a mug, then poured in the hot water.

"Shelly is in critical condition in the ICU; Loretta was still in surgery at 2:10am; Deputy Sommers died from a gunshot wound to the head."

"Lord have mercy," Kris said quietly. "And the attacker?"

"Shot dead by Deputy Turner and Detective Kleist."

"Was anyone else hurt?"

"No."

"Do they know why it happened?"

"I can piece together some things from the original patients, and what was said, so this is by no means certain. The young woman with the three gunshot wounds was impregnated by an older next-door neighbor. The young woman's father took exception and confronted the neighbor. In the process, there was an exchange of gunfire between multiple people. The girl was shot, along with her brother; the neighbor who impregnated her was shot, and his wife was killed. The attacker at the hospital was the son of the woman who was killed."

"You Americans and your fetish for guns!" Kris said in exasperation.

"First of all, you're an American," I said with a wan smile. "Second, blaming the gun is like blaming a pencil for *Mein Kampf*. I'm not opposed to reasonable restrictions on gun ownership, such as prohibiting felons or the mentally ill from owning them. I also think permits are a good idea, but I would never support a ban on guns."

"Even after your two friends were shot?"

"I didn't think cars should be banned when Jocelyn was nearly killed in an accident or when Lee was murdered with one. But can we please set this aside for another time?"

"I'm sorry," Kris said. "I shouldn't have brought politics into it. Will Shelly and Loretta live?"

"I don't know," I sighed. "Shelly is in what the newspapers would call 'extremely critical' or 'grave' condition. She lost a lot of blood, and there was damage to her liver. If she survives the next twenty-four hours, she has a good chance of recovery. As for Loretta, the last I heard was she has a possible spinal cord injury. I wanted to scrub in but wasn't allowed."

"What happened to the patients?"

"Two of the three weren't in any real danger and were sent by ambulance to Columbus. The young woman coded before we could get her to surgery."

"You were in a treatment room the whole time?"

"Yes. I didn't go into the corridor for almost ten minutes after the shooting stopped because Becky and I were trying to save Deputy Sommers while Doctor Nielson was trying to keep the young woman alive. I didn't see either Loretta or Shelly because they were taken to surgery before I threw in the towel in trying to revive Deputy Sommers."

I removed the tea ball, put it in the sink, then sat down to sip my tea, with Kris sitting across from me at the dinette table in the kitchen.

"What happens now? The news said the hospital was closed."

"To trauma," I replied. "The ED is closed until they finish the investigation. When I left, the shooter was still on the floor, covered with a sheet, and evidence technicians were swarming the place. Doctor Cutter instructed me to take today off and to speak to a counselor. I'll speak to Doctor Mercer because the last thing I want to do is talk to anyone from Psych at the hospital."

"When will you go back to work?"

"Wednesday, at the Free Clinic. I'll speak to Owen Roth after I speak to Doctor Mercer. He has to clear me to perform procedures. That's normal for any psychological or physical trauma. I don't think it'll be a problem."

"How do you feel? I mean, besides tired?"

"OK, I think. But I'm probably not the best judge of that right now. My initial reaction was as a physician. I suspect the more time I have to think about it, the more it might affect me. Strangely, I was never afraid, just concerned for my patient and then Deputy Sommers."

"How long do you plan to sleep?" Kris asked.

"Until I wake up from the nightmare," I replied with a heavy sigh.

"My class today is at 1:00pm, so I have no reason to get up early, though Rachel will certainly be up at her usual time."

"Does she know?"

"No. I didn't turn on the news until after I put her to bed. She was unhappy that you weren't here, but I explained you were helping sick people and would be late. Thank you for calling right away."

"It was after I tried to revive Deputy Sommers," I said.

"I can't reasonably object to that," Kris replied. "You called as soon as it was practical. And you're safe. I think it's best to not watch the news in the morning, which I do sometimes after you leave for the hospital."

"Probably. We can't hide all the evil in the world from our children, but I think it's better she hears it from one of us than sees the news. At her age, who knows what's going through her little head. Back to sleeping, I think I'll sleep until around 7:00am and nap later. Is Rachel on her usual Tuesday schedule?"

"Yes. I'll take her to Abi's house on my way to the university and pick her up on the way home."

"Then I'll nap while you two are out."

"Are you sure you'll be OK?"

"I think so," I replied. "I'll call Doctor Mercer first thing."

I finished my tea, and Kris and I said evening prayers, then went upstairs. I completed my bedtime routine, then got into bed with my wife, set the alarm, and snuggled close to fall asleep spooned together.

I woke with the alarm at 7:00am and felt as if I'd been run over by a truck. I knew it was the aftereffects of the adrenaline rush, and there wasn't much to do about it except begin my day and wait for my body to recover. Kris and I got out of bed, took a shower together, and after we had dressed, I dialed Doctor Mercer's private number while Kris went to get Rachel.

"Fran Mercer," she said when she answered.



"It's Mike Loucks," I said.

"I heard what happened! Are you OK?"

"Physically, yes; Doctor Cutter instructed me to speak to a counselor."

"That's normal in these situations. Are you off work until you're cleared by someone?"

"Yes and no. Tomorrow is my day at the Free Clinic, and because I don't do any procedures there, I can do that. I have to speak to Owen Roth, the Chief Surgeon, to be cleared for procedures."

"I take it from this call you want to speak to me rather than someone in Psych at Moore?"

"You take it correctly and for what I think are obvious reasons."

"This kind of thing has to be done face-to-face because it's the only way to judge the answers. I know it's a long way to come here, but I could meet you in Rutherford at 4:30pm if that works for you. That way, I don't have to reschedule anyone."

"I could do that," I said. "My normal work schedule would have me on until 9:00pm, so it's not taking me away from any plans."

"Then I'll see you at 4:30pm in the same office in the medical building as we met before. How are the two doctors who were shot?"

"One is in the ICU in critical condition; the other was still in surgery when I left the hospital around 2:30am. I'm going to call and check as soon as we hang up, then I need to call my parents."

"They know you're safe, right?"

"Yes. Kris called them both last night after I called her."

"Good. See you later today."

We said 'goodbye', I hung up, then went downstairs and let Kris know the plans.

"Will you get enough sleep?" she asked.

"Yes. I'll take a two-hour nap, and I can sleep later tomorrow due to my usual Wednesday schedule. I need to call and check on Loretta."

"Of course."

I picked up the kitchen extension and dialed the number for Surgery.

"Surgical Nurses' Station," Kim Carter said.

"Hi, Kim," I said. "This is Doctor Mike. I'm calling for a status on Loretta Gibbs and Shelly Lindsay."

"Doctor Gibbs is in the CCU and is stable; Doctor Lindsay is in the ICU and is still listed as critical."

"Any word on Doctor Gibbs' injuries?"

"Neuro has to wait for the swelling to go down to make an assessment."

"Right. Thank you, Kim."

"Are you OK, Doctor Mike?"

"Better than they are," I replied. "If there are any significant changes, would you call me at home, please?"

"Of course, Doctor."

I thanked her, said 'goodbye', then hung up.

"No change on Shelly," I said to Kris. "Loretta is in the Critical Care Unit with stable vitals, but they can't assess her neurologically until the swelling goes down."

"What's the difference between that and intensive care?"

"For the most part, it's simply a matter of staff-to-patient ratio. It's much higher in the ICU, where a nurse usually only has two patients, or sometimes three; whereas in the CCU, it's four to six. In Loretta's case, it's because she could have further neurological effects, so putting her in a ward where the ratio is about eight or ten to one is too risky."

"But she's breathing on her own?"

"Yes. If she was on a vent, she'd be in the ICU for the first forty-eight hours. But that's not etched in stone. The other thing about the CCU is that they turn the lights down at night, whereas the ICU is always lit. Given that ICU patients are nearly always heavily sedated, that doesn't affect their sleep."

"You should probably call your parents," Kris said. "I'll make breakfast."

"Thanks."

I dialed my mom's house first, and Elaine answered. She asked how I was, then handed the phone to my mom.

"Hi, Mike. Thank God you're OK!"

"Hi, Mom," I said. "Sorry, I couldn't call last night. I didn't get home until nearly 3:00am."

"Kris called, which I'm sure she told you. How is everyone?"

"The two doctors are out of surgery and are what I would call 'guarded' if I had any mind to speak to the Press for any reason. We'll know more later."

"The news said it was a domestic dispute."

"Yes, though I know very little about what actually happened before the person walked into the ED with the gun. I didn't see anything that happened except Deputy Sommers being shot, but all I saw was her collapse."

"The news said the gunman was a former Army Ranger."

Which explained how he managed to shoot Deputy Sommers in the head with the door only open a few inches.

"Well, Deputy Turner and Detective Kleist took him down with five shots," I said. "All of them hit center mass, according to Deputy Kenseth."

"Have you spoken to your father?"

"He's next. I assume you told your parents and Liz?"

"Yes."

"Thanks. I'll call Grandfather in a bit. I'll be in Rutherford, and I'll probably stop in to see him."

"Rutherford? Why?"

"I'm meeting Doctor Mercer for a counseling session. It's required before I'm cleared to do procedures. It's all standard. The ED is closed until at least noon."

"What happens to people who need the ED?"

"EMS would transport them to the nearest hospital, which for McKinley is Columbus, but in the western part of the county, they'd take them to Rutherford. Other areas could go south or east. The rest of the hospital is open and operating normally, though I suspect there is a large law enforcement presence."

"I'm just glad you're OK, Mike."

"Thanks."

I said 'goodbye', then called my dad and had a similar conversation with him. I called my grandfather, and when he heard I was going to be in Rutherford, he asked me to come to dinner, and after checking with Kris, I agreed. My final call was to Internal Medicine.

"How are you doing, Petrovich?" Clarissa asked when she came on the line.

"Like I'm on the back end of an adrenaline rush."

"I tried to come see you before I left, but they wouldn't let anyone into the ED because it's a crime scene. They did tell me you weren't hurt."

"Did they say when they'd open to trauma again?"

"2:00pm. Are you coming in?"

"No. I was told to take the day off and to see a counselor. I'm going to see Doctor Mercer later today. I'm allowed to work at the Free Clinic tomorrow, but Owen Roth has to sign off on me doing procedures. Supposedly, that's standard procedure."

"I can see it," Clarissa said. "Mental, emotional, or physical trauma could easily impact your work. Did you hear the latest on Doctor Gibbs and Doctor Lindsay?"

"Yes. I called the Nurses' station this morning. I take it the place is still swarming with cops?"

"They're checking IDs of everyone who comes in at every entrance; there are at least a dozen squad cars and cruisers at various places. Do you know anything about what caused it?"

"No more than was on the news. Fortunately, I was in Trauma 1 during the whole thing. Shelly was there but left to triage the other two patients, which is when she was shot. Deputy Sommers was shot right in front of me, though."

"Jesus, Petrovich! But how?"

"She drew her service pistol, crouched down, and opened the door to respond. A round was fired, striking her in the right temple. We tried for ten minutes, including intubation, bagging, and CPR, but it was useless. She never had a pulse, and I'm fairly certain her pupils were fixed and dilated before Becky and I got to her a few seconds after she was shot."

"And you're really OK?"

"I am. I'm sure it'll hit me at some point, which is why I was ordered by Cutter to see someone. Fortunately, he let me slide on seeing someone in Psych."

"Smart move. Those headshrinkers would use it to exact revenge."

"Fortunately, all they could do would be make a recommendation. It's up to Owen Roth. But the last thing I want is something like that in my medical records at Moore."

"I hear you. I need to go, Petrovich. Call me if you need anything."

"Thanks, Lissa."

We said 'goodbye', and I replaced the handset on the hook, only to have the phone ring immediately.

"Korolyov-Loucks residence; Mike speaking."

"Oh, thank God!" Maryam Khouri gushed. "I was so worried when I saw in the newspaper two doctors had been shot in the ED in McKinley! Who?"

"Shelly Lindsay and Loretta Gibbs."

"Lord have mercy! How are they?"

"Shelly suffered a gunshot wound to the abdomen and lost a significant amount of blood. One lobe of her liver was removed. She's in critical condition in the ICU. Loretta was shot in the back, and there was involvement of her spine. She's in the CCU after surgery, but until the swelling goes down, they won't know about any impairment."

"I'll pray for them and for you, too."

"And for Deputy Sommers," I said. "She was killed protecting a patient, Perry Nielson, me, our med students, and nurses."

"Lord have mercy! You were shot at?"

"No. We were all in Trauma 1; she was with us checking on the patient, and when the shots rang out, she drew her service pistol and opened the door. A shot rang out, and she went down from a round through her right temple. The shooter was killed seconds later by Deputy Turner and Detective Kleist, but by that time, he'd shot both Shelly and Loretta."

"Is everyone else OK?"

"Yes."

"Good. I'll let you go; say 'hello' to Kris and everyone for me. Call soon, please."

"Thanks, I will."

We said 'goodbye', and I hung up, then helped Kris finish making breakfast. We had just sat down to eat when the phone rang, and I debated if I should answer it and decided I needed to.

"Korolyov-Loucks residence; Mike speaking."

"Is this Doctor Michael Loucks?"

"Yes. Who's calling?"

"Carl Peabody, *McKinley Times*. I'd like to ask you some questions."



"No comment," I said. "Please contact the Hospital Administrator's office for an official statement."

"I want to get another perspective."

"I'm not interested in answering any questions."

"Can I leave a number?"

"You can, but it won't change my answer."

He insisted, so I wrote down the number and then hung up.

"Why not talk to the Press?" Kris asked.

"Because I don't want to," I said. "The last thing I need to do is say something that creates a problem for the hospital or the Sheriff. And I'm absolutely not going to violate Loretta's or Shelly's privacy. Talking to doctors is OK, but not the Press. Not to mention, I'm positive I'll be asked more about Deputy Sommers."

"How could it be a problem for the Sheriff if the attacker is dead?"

"I don't know, and that's a good enough reason not to say anything. I honestly don't know if there was an accomplice or if there is more to the original crime."

"Do you think there was?"

"I doubt it, but who knows? The Sheriff will sort it out with help from the McKinley PD. It's outside the city limits, so the Sheriff is the lead, but there's some kind of joint response agreement between the City and the County."

We finished breakfast, cleaned up the kitchen, and said our morning prayers. Rachel, unsurprisingly, asked me to play my guitar and sing to her, so I did that for about an hour. I was interrupted twice by phone calls -- one from Doctor Blahnik and one from Father Nicholas, both of whom I assured I was OK.

When I finished playing for Rachel, Kris and I agreed it was nice enough that we could go out for a family walk. When we returned, I built a fire in the fireplace. We spent time playing with Rachel, and I fielded calls from Peter Baldwin at Emory, as well as my godparents, Geno, Tasha, and José, who promised to call the rest of the band. The final call of the morning was from Jocelyn, and I reassured her I was OK.

Kris, Rachel, and I had lunch around 11:30am. Once we finished lunch, I cleaned up while Kris got ready for class and prepared Rachel's bag. She and Rachel left, and I went to take my nap.



## **February 20, 1990, Rutherford, Ohio**

"How are you doing, Mike?" Fran Mercer asked when I sat down on the couch in her friend's office.

"I've mostly recovered from the aftereffects of the adrenaline surge. I slept about three hours, then took a two-hour nap before I left to come see you. Tomorrow is my day in the Free Clinic, so I can get enough sleep tonight."

"Who is it I'll need to call after this session?"

"Doctor Owen Roth, the Chief Surgeon. I called him right before I left, so he'll expect your call. Tomorrow would be OK, as I'll be at the Clinic."

"I'll call as soon as we finish. Are you nervous about going back to the hospital?"

"I don't think so," I said. "I suppose the real question is how I'll feel when I walk into the ED on Thursday."

"Does some rule prevent you from stopping in tomorrow?"

"No. I wasn't told to stay away, just to take today off, which isn't surprising given I'd already been at the hospital for nearly twenty-one hours and wouldn't have had the minimum eight hours off between shifts. That can be waived in an emergency, but given the ED was closed to trauma until 2:00pm today, it was easy for them to rearrange staffing."

"I suggest you go in, spend at least a few minutes there, and see how you feel, then call me. Could you do that at lunch tomorrow?"

"Yes."

"How are the doctors?"

"Confidentiality applies," I said.

"Yes, of course."

"No change for Doctor Lindsay, which is a good thing, given she had liver damage. If she makes it through to tomorrow morning without a setback, her prognosis will be good, though she won't be out of the woods. For Doctor Gibbs, the post-surgery swelling is going down, but it'll be Thursday morning before we know if there is any neurological damage."

"Paraplegia?"

"That's the concern. She's breathing without a vent, and her vitals are stable. All we can do is wait to see what happens."

"You didn't see either of them shot, right?"

"Correct. I did see Deputy Sommers shot and killed."

"Tell me about that."

"She heard the gunshots, ordered us to take what cover we could behind the trauma table, and then drew her pistol. She crouched and opened the door and was struck in the temple almost immediately. She collapsed, bleeding profusely, and perhaps two seconds later, a nurse and I moved to her while Doctor Nielson attended to the shooting victim whom we had been treating.

"I immediately called for an intubation kit, which my student brought me. The nurse performed CPR while I intubated, and then my student began bagging. I checked for a pulse and found none, and heard no heart sounds. We continued CPR for another five minutes with no success. I then checked the Deputy's pupils and found them fixed and dilated. Given the obvious brain injury, I determined further resuscitation attempts would be futile and called time of death.

"At that point, the nurse, my student, and I moved to help Doctor Nielsen as the seventeen-year-old gunshot victim had coded due to hypovolemia. We ran in several units of blood and tried multiple doses of epinephrine, but it was to no avail, as she'd bled out. We *might* have been able to save her without the attack, but it would have been dicey, given her wounds."

"A coolly clinical report, just as I would expect from you. What happened next?"

"Just as Doctor Nielson called time of death, Detective Kleist came into Trauma 1 and gave us the 'all clear' but asked us to stay in the room until they could escort

us out without disturbing the crime scene. That happened about twenty minutes later, which is when I found out Loretta and Shelly had been shot and the gunman killed by law enforcement. We were asked to sit in the lounge and wait to be interviewed, and I took that opportunity to call Kris and let her know I was safe."

"What were you thinking when the Deputy was shot?"

"Only about our patient and the Deputy," I said. "My mind was completely clear and focused on trying to save their lives. I felt the adrenaline effects where time dilates and thinking is rapid and clear. I was on autopilot until we pronounced both patients."

"When did the adrenaline begin to wear off?"

"When I was driving home," I said. "Fortunately, it's a relatively short drive because, by the time I arrived home, I was thoroughly exhausted but not tired. I was, in effect, still wired even though I felt the physical effects of the adrenaline wearing off."

"When you slept, did you dream?"

"No."

"Did you take anything to help you sleep?"

"Just chamomile tea before bed early this morning; nothing before my nap. I did skip coffee this morning."

"That was wise. Did you, at any point, think, 'I need a drink'?"

"No. The only thing I said I needed was sleep. Kris was waiting up for me, though Rachel was asleep. We didn't say anything to her this morning."

"Probably wise. At two-and-a-half, she'd have a very difficult time processing what happened. How is Kris?"

"She hadn't heard what had happened before I called, so she didn't have time to worry about me. She was obviously concerned after I told her, but the fact I was safe limited that. She called my parents to let them know, as well as her family."

"Do you feel ready to resume work?"

"Yes," I replied. "I'm sure I'll have somewhat closer supervision for the next few days, but that doesn't bother me. Do you have any concerns?"

"Always when someone is involved in an incident which could lead to post-traumatic stress disorder. And you know the symptoms can take some time to appear. But I think you can safely go back to work, so long as you commit to calling me with *any* symptoms -- sleeplessness, nightmares, inordinate fear, and so on. Who's going to hold you accountable?"

"Rachel!"

Doctor Mercer laughed, "Yes, of course; now, the serious answer?"

"Clarissa, of course. And Ghost -- Doctor Casper. Normally, it would be Shelly Lindsay, but she's in the CCU. And, of course, Kris will hold me to account at home."

"How is she doing?"

"Great! She's four months along, so she's showing, but she's not uncomfortable. Rachel is very interested in a baby sister but not so much a baby brother!"

"Are there any little boys with whom she gets along well?"

"My godson, Michael, but she also met a boy at the park, and Kris said she played nice with him. I really think it's just little Viktor and some other boys being so rambunctious. "

"I can't imagine that was you when you were little."

"As my mom once said, Jocelyn did a good job of keeping Dale and me in line, starting with me in kindergarten and Dale in second grade."

"How are things going otherwise?"

"Fine. There have been some positive changes in the trauma surgery program, and I'll have a PGY1 in June rather than two years from now. They accelerated the program so that when the new surgical wing opens, we'll have a full complement of trauma surgeons. Our draft class for the Match looks good, too.

"My schedule is tentatively set for 5:00am to 5:00pm on a general surgical team one week and covering the ED the next. The new PGY1, who should be Mary Anderson, a Fourth Year I've trained, will cover the ED when I'm in surgery and nights when I'm in the ED. It's a lousy schedule for her, but she'll get more training that way."

"Those swapped schedules stink, but at least they're only twelve hours."

"And it's better than ninety-plus hours per week. The only downside for me is I won't have an assignment at the Free Clinic. And neither will the new PGY1. I

felt that was valuable, but it's only for ED and Medicine Residents going forward.

"Let's skip our call in the morning and schedule one for a week from tomorrow. We can cover both topics then."

"OK."

I thanked her, left, and headed to my grandfather's house. I wasn't surprised to find my mom, Stefan, Elaine, and April there, along with Paul, Liz, and Michael.

"How are your doctor friends?" my grandfather asked.

"Alive and with a chance to recover," I said. "Unlike the Deputy. Perry Nielson, one of the Attendings, said it was crazier than anything he had seen at Cook County in Chicago, and that hospital ED is basically the craziest in the country. What do you think of what's happening in the Soviet Union?"

"I believe the phrase is guardedly optimistic," my grandfather replied. "We shall see if the Communists are telling the truth, or if this is mere «маскировка» (*maskirovka*)." ("deception")

"Changing to a subject closer to home," Mom said. "How is Kris feeling?"

"She's fine. No morning sickness or any other discomfort; Liz, how are you doing?"

"About the same. I'm due about three weeks after Kris."

"How's Emmy?"



"Itching to go back to work! She's back in about three weeks. She loves having Carrie, but she is def not a stay-at-home mom!"

"No kidding!"

"She'd love to see you if you have time to stop in. I could call her."

I thought about it and nodded, "Just fifteen minutes, but yes, I'd like that. I'm going to stop and see Dad, and I'll stop by Emmy's after that."

Liz made the call, and after dinner with my extended family, I stopped in to see my dad and answered the same questions I'd answered for everyone else. I spent about thirty minutes at my dad's house, then headed to Emmy's house.

"And here we are, unable to play doctor!" she teased after a hug.

"That was a long time ago, Deputy!" I said. "Not to mention we're both married to other people!"

"True! I spoke to Scott Turner. He put three in the asshole's X-ring."

"And Detective Kleist from McKinley PD added two for good measure. Sorry, I couldn't do anything for Tracy Sommers."

"Not your fault, Mike."

"Thanks. Can I see Carrie?"

"She's sleeping, so if you're quiet."

"Been there, done that," I chuckled.

Emmy laughed and nodded, and we walked down the hallway of the ranch house she and Al had bought just before Carrie had been born. Carrie was a cute little infant, and after about thirty seconds, we went back to the living room.

"Scott told me you disarmed a perp in the ER waiting room."

"A wrist lock that prevented him from pulling a gun from his jacket pocket. Deputy Turner was first through the door, and I called out to him. I didn't disarm the guy, but I certainly prevented him from being shot by the second-best shot in the state!"

Emmy laughed, "He'll never live down being beaten by a girl! Al won't shoot with me because I kick his ass every time!"

"You seem to be very happy."

"I'm doing something I love, and which I'm very good at, and I have a wonderful new daughter with Al! What else could I ask for?"

"I'm glad."

"And you?"

"Mostly happy at work and looking forward to baby number two; well, the first with Kris."

"Mostly happy?"

"There have been some ups and downs, but things are pretty good. A bit more drama than I would have preferred, but until yesterday, I would have said things were going as well as could be expected with a new program."

"You enjoy it, though, right?"

"Like you, I'm doing what I love and something I'm good at."

Emmy smirked, "True when I was sixteen and you were eighteen, too!"

"Fond memories! I do need to get going because my girls are waiting for me."

"Don't be a stranger, Mike! Let's get the families together."

She walked me to the door, we hugged, and I walked to my car. I waved, got in, and headed back to McKinley.



## **February 21, 1990, McKinley, Ohio**

"How are you doing, Mike?" Gale Turner asked when I arrived at the Free Clinic on Wednesday morning.

"I'm OK. I saw a counselor yesterday, and she called Owen Roth to clear me. I spoke to him this morning, and I'll be back doing procedures tomorrow."

"Good. You'll have only exams and birth control requests today. I'll handle anything else. That's per Doctor Cutter."

"Understood."

"OK. Get to it!"

I left his office and went to the break room, where Trina jumped up and hugged me.

"I'm so glad you weren't injured," she said. "When I heard two doctors were shot, I thought the worst. How are the doctors?"

"Shelly Lindsay is improving and will be moved to CCU from ICU today. Loretta Gibbs will have a neuro exam later today. She's still in the CCU."

"Hi, Doctor Mike!" Nurse Michelle said, coming into the break room. "I'm glad you're OK."

"Me, too!"

"We have our first patient," she said. "Employment physical for the PD."

"Sworn officer or civilian?"

"Sworn officer; a detective coming here from a small town in Eastern Kentucky. She actually started on Monday."

"OK. Bring her to the exam room, and we'll get started."

The exam was routine and was the first of seven appointments before lunch, six of which were either for new or renewed prescriptions for birth control. When it was time for lunch, I let Doctor Turner know I was heading to the hospital to do what Doctor Mercer had suggested, and about ten minutes later, I parked and went in the usual entrance, which was now staffed by a security guard. He didn't ask for ID, so I walked down the long corridor, past the main entrance, and into the ED, where a Sheriff's deputy checked my ID before admitting me.

"Mike?" Ghost said. "Is everything OK?"

"Yes," I replied. "My counselor suggested I come visit today to see how I felt walking into the ED."

"How *do* you feel?"

"Strange because I'm wearing a tie and my medical coat! How is Loretta?"

"Not good. They called for specialists from Cleveland Clinic and OSU to consult."

"Is she awake?"

"Yes, I'm sure she'd want to see you if you have time."

"I'll make time," I said. "Any update on Shelly Lindsay?"

"Bob Aniston said she's out of the woods but will have a long recovery."

"That's a relief. Did they move her to the CCU?"

"Yes."

"OK. I'm going up to see them, but I need to step into Trauma 1 first, if it's open."

"It is."

"Thanks."

I walked into Trauma 1 and still felt OK, so I left the ED and headed to the CCU to see Shelly and Loretta. I spoke with the charge nurse, and she gave me permission to enter the CCU ward. I saw Shelly Lindsay first and stopped at her bed.

"Hi, Shel," I said. "How are you doing?"

"Feeling no pain," she said, holding up the control that let her dose herself with pain medication.

"Ghost said you're in good shape, all things considered."

"The worst part is being stuck in bed here for several weeks."

"Nobody likes being in the hospital, and we doctors are the worst patients. I only have a few minutes before I have to leave to get back to the Free Clinic, so I'm going to see Loretta."

"They told you, right?"

"Yes. I'll come see you every day."

"Thanks."

I squeezed her hand, then walked over to the opposite end of the ward.

"Hi, Lor,"

"Hi, Mike."

"I'd ask how you were doing..."

"They told you, right?"

"Yes. What did Baker and Cohen say?"

"Not much beyond the damage is at L3."

Which meant basically no function below her navel if the damage was permanent.

"Is there anything I can do for you?"

"Put in a good word with the boss? And I don't mean Cutter."

"You're in my prayers every day, Loretta. Have you seen Bobby and Bobby Junior?"

"Bobby came up to see me after a run this morning. I can't see Bobby Junior until I'm out of the CCU."

"OK. I'll come see you tomorrow. I need to get back to the Free Clinic."

"Thanks for coming, Mike."

"You're welcome."





## II. Aftermath

### February 22, 1990, McKinley, Ohio

On Thursday morning, when I arrived at the hospital, Nurse Nicole let me know that Doctor Roth wanted to see me. I decided to go straight to his office, wearing my tie and medical coat, and change afterwards.

"You wanted to see me?" I said to Doctor Roth from the door to his office.

"Come in, please, and shut the door."

I did as he asked and sat down across the desk from him.

"How are you?"

"Fine," I said. "I slept OK last night, and I don't feel impaired in any way."

"Good. We have a bit of a staffing problem with losing Shelly for an extended period of time. I spoke with John Cutter and Brent Williams, who's the Acting Chief in the ED, to work out a solution. We've had to juggle, and Medicine is going to lend Emergency Medicine two Residents and bring in *locum tenentes* to cover. Two are necessary, as he needs to cover for Loretta and for you.

"I'm sure you know that it's nigh on impossible to fill an empty Resident slot in February, and Shelly is a PGY5. The best we could possibly do is someone who failed to Match last year, and that is not something I want to contemplate. That means you'll take on some of Shelly's role and be on-call for the ED. Basically, going back to the old way, or how it is when you aren't on shift."

"It sounds as if my hours are changing."

"As of today, unless you need time to make arrangements for childcare. You'll have Shelly's current 0500 to 1700 shift, the same as we plan for you to have in June."

That meant I could leave at 5:00pm, which was a good thing, and having my weekend free was a good thing. There was, though, one concern.

"What about the Free Clinic?" I asked.

"Doctor Saunders will take over that shift," Doctor Roth said. "We can't afford to lose a surgeon, even if you can't completely cover for Shelly."

I really didn't want to give up that shift, but there wasn't much I could do about it, as nobody outside surgery could perform the procedures I was authorized to do in the ED.

I nodded, "OK. Who from Medicine?"

"Doctor Gómez and Doctor Saunders. The rule used to be more senior Residents, but Doctor Saunders has completed her ED rotation and had very high marks. She works a shift schedule almost identical to yours, so she'll take on your students; you'll take Shelly's."

"The ED will be short an Attending," I observed.

"Fortunately, that's not my problem," Doctor Roth said. "Brent Williams was authorized to accelerate hiring an Attending who was to start in June. He can fill you in, if you want more information."

"OK. Who are Shelly's students?"

"Erin Jackson and Todd Blythe. You interviewed Erin, and she's on our Match list; Todd is Third Year and hasn't decided."

"OK. Does Brent know I won't be in the ED today unless I'm called?"

"Yes."

"Dress code?" I asked with a raised eyebrow.

Doctor Roth laughed, "John Cutter said to cut you some slack and say it would be OK for you to conduct rounds in your scrubs."

"And what do *you* think?"

Doctor Roth smiled, "That 'advice' from Cutter is similar to 'advice' from your Bishop!"

I laughed and nodded.

"And off the record?"

"I think the public perception is that patients are actually more comfortable with a doctor in scrubs in the hospital. In private practice, ties and medical coats are still appropriate."

"I appreciate it. Who is handling Shelly's surgeries?"

"Some of the more junior Residents will have a chance. I'll see what I can do for you, but with you covering the ED, we have to be smart about it."

"Am I cleared for all procedures?"

"I don't see why not. You seem to be on an even keel, and Doctor Mercer believes it's OK to throw you back into the fray. Go find your students and bring them up to speed on the new plan. You'll be supervising prepping Burke's patients today and tomorrow. Shelly was on his team."

"Any updates on Shelly or Loretta?"

"Shelly continues her recovery, and if it continues apace, she'll move from the CCU to Medicine on Monday. Her liver function is good, which was the obvious concern besides the hypovolemia. Loretta has an incomplete SCI at L3. Late yesterday, she regained some sensory function in her right leg, which is a hopeful sign but is not definitive one way or the other. Neither specialist is willing to make any kind of prognosis at this point."

"OK. I'll check in on both of them each day I'm here."

"Then get to it, Doctor!"

"Right away!"

I left his office and went to the locker room to change into my usual red scrubs, then went to the lounge where I saw a pair of students -- a short brown-haired girl and a lanky black-haired guy.

"Good morning, Erin; I presume you're Todd?"

"Yes," he said as they both stood up.

"Hi, Doctor Mike," Erin said. "Shall we present the pre-ops?"

"Yes, please. A quick note before you begin -- things will change because I have a different role from Doctor Lindsay. Todd, I'll want to see your procedure book after Erin presents."

"We have two procedures today," Erin said. "We verified all labs and vitals for each patient are in range..."

"Sorry to interrupt, but I'd like to hear the actual vital signs and any labs that are borderline, please."

"Sorry, Doctor."

"It's OK. I do things differently. Continue, please."

"Patient one is a sixty-seven-year-old male scheduled for a resection of a functional adenoma. BP is 150/82; pulse 75; PO<sub>2</sub> 98% on room air; EKG shows normal sinus rhythm with no variation; fasting glucose is 162; cleared for surgery by Doctor Burke.

"Patient two is a nineteen-year-old female scheduled for excision of an osteochondromas of the right knee. BP is 114/62; pulse 64; PO<sub>2</sub> 99% on room air; EKG shows normal sinus rhythm with no variation."

"Distance runner?" I asked.

"Marathons," Erin replied. "All labs were completed and verified for both patients and no anomalies other than the fasting glucose on patient one. Both have been NPO since midnight."

"What's next?" I asked.

"Patient one needs to be shaved and an IV inserted."

"OK. We have a few minutes before we need to do that. Todd, may I see your procedure book?"

Todd handed me his book, and I flipped through it. While I had interviewed Erin, I hadn't worked with her, as I hadn't been in the ED when Erin had served her Clerkship. Her Sub-I would be in April and May, but with my new assignment, I wouldn't see her in the ED.

Todd hadn't had an Emergency Medicine rotation -- it was scheduled for April and May as well. His book showed what I considered sufficient procedures for a Third Year who hadn't yet had his Emergency Medicine Clerkship.

"I'm assigned to cover the ED," I said. "That will be our main focus. The usual procedure is for the Fourth Year to stay on the ward and the Third Year to accompany me. If possible, I'll take you both to observe. Any questions?"

"Will we have a chance to scrub in?" Erin asked.

"I can't promise, given I'm a PGY1, and I've been assigned to the ED as part of the trauma surgery program. Let's go see our first patient. Todd is to present when we go into the room. Please introduce me as 'Doctor Mike'."

"Yes, Doctor," he said.

The prep was routine, with Erin inserting the IV and Todd shaving the area where the incision would be made. Doctor Burke came to check on the patient, and Erin presented. Shortly after he left, anesthesia arrived, and twenty minutes later, we moved the patient to OR 2.

"I'm going to go check on Doctor Gibbs and Doctor Lindsay," I said. "Use the time to study, please."

I left the surgical ward and headed for the CCU to see both Shelly and Loretta.

"Morning," I said to Shelly Lindsay. "I hear things are looking up."

"That's what they tell me. Give me a peek at my chart?"

I chuckled because patients weren't usually allowed to review their own charts, and there was no official exception for doctors. I took the chart from the hook at the end of the bed and handed it to her. She flipped through it, handed it back, and I hung it on the hook again.

"Hoping to get rid of the catheter?" I asked with a grin.

"Yeah, but the screws won't let me out of bed until I move to Medicine."

"I've been inside Southern Ohio Correctional Facility in Lucasville," I said. "This is *nothing* compared to that!"

"What were you doing there?"

"Prison ministry. I thought I told you about that, but perhaps not. Anything I can get you?"

"A pizza?" Shelly suggested.

"I wonder if anyone has ever tried to call for delivery from a hospital bed?"

Shelly laughed, "I should do that just to see Baker's reaction!"

"On a serious note -- anything I need to know about your Third Year?"

"He's competent and attentive, about all we can say about most Third Years. You know we put Erin on our Match list, though I don't know if we're her first choice."

"Where else did she interview?"

"Every hospital in Cincinnati. If you recall, she's from Milford, and I think she'd prefer to go back."

"I had the impression during the interview that she had a reason to be in this area."

"Boyfriend, but they broke up right before her Match list was due."

"Well, that was inconvenient. I take it he works here?"

"He's an engineer who works for the McKinley Water Department. They met at a chess tournament and then went to UC together."

"We played against Milford during my Junior year in a regional tournament, but I don't recall seeing her. And I haven't played much at all since I graduated. I bet she knows a friend of a friend who I met in Cincinnati. Anyway, I need to see Loretta and then get back to the ward. I'll come see you tomorrow; call me if you need anything I can provide."

"Thanks, Mike."

I squeezed her hand and then went to Doctor Gibbs' bed.

"Morning, Lor," I said. "Owen Roth said there was a significant improvement."



"Hi, Mike. I have feeling in my right leg except for a few spots on my inner thigh; no voluntary muscle movement, though."

"You had significant trauma, Lor. It's only been three days. Getting feeling back is a good sign. Did they tell you about the staffing changes?"

"No. What?"

"Clarissa Saunders and Antonio Gómez are assigned to the ED until the end of May; I'm covering for Shelly but handling ED consults during my shifts. Obviously, I can't do everything Shelly did, but they're short surgeons, so I'll be doing most of the daily scut. Burke is bringing in two *locum tenentes* to cover for Clarissa and Antonio. Clarissa will cover my Free Clinic shift as well. Owen Roth says that Brent Williams is going to try to accelerate hiring an Attending and has permission to hire right away if he's able."

"What a mess," Loretta said. "Any more information about what happened?"

"The Sheriff is not saying much because they're still investigating the original incident. He scheduled a press conference for 1:00pm tomorrow to give a status update. They did arrest two suspects in the original incident. You know what happened with the guy who attacked you and Shelly and killed Tracy Sommers. Her funeral is tomorrow."

"Scott Turner, right?"

"And Jill Kleist. Five rounds total, all hits."

"How are you doing?" Doctor Gibbs asked.

"I'm sleeping OK and have no nightmares. I went to the ED yesterday and didn't have a bad reaction."

"Keep talking to your counselor."

"You, too. I hate to cut this short, but I need to get back to the ward. I'll stop in on my way out today."

"Thanks, Mike."

I left the CCU and returned to the ward just in time to be called for a consult. I went to the lounge and asked Todd to join me, and we went down to the ED.

"Mike Loucks, surgery," I said, walking into Trauma 2. "What do we have?"

"Hi, Mike," Naveen Varma said. "Kelly Jordon; twenty-year-old female; high-speed MVA; stable vitals; unit of cross-matched whole blood; abdominal guarding and distension; no penetrating wounds. Ultrasound is ready for you."

"Thanks, Naveen."

I performed an exam and confirmed Naveen's observations, then performed an ultrasound.

"Free fluid in Morison's," I said. "Todd, call upstairs and let them know we have an ex-lap with possible splenic involvement. Report the vitals, please."

"Right away, Doctor Mike!" Todd replied, then made the call.

After a brief conversation with the nurse, he said Doctor Roth wanted to speak to me.

"Yes, Owen?"

"Looks like it's you and me," he said. "Bring your patient up, and both your students can scrub in. We'll decide on whether to do an open or laparoscopic procedure after evaluation."

"We'll be up shortly," I said.

I hung up and asked Naveen to have one of his students call for transport, which they did. Eight minutes later, we wheeled Ms. Jordan into OR3. Todd and I went to the scrub room where Erin was already scrubbing in under the watchful eye of Nurse Ellen. Once we all finished scrubbing in, we joined Doctor Roth, Doctor Birch, and an anesthesiologist I didn't recognize.

"Open procedure, Mike," Doctor Roth said. "You're third surgeon, so you handle the suction, and if there are no complications, I'll have you close."

"Understood," I said.

Fifteen minutes later, the spleen was exposed.

"That doesn't look like a lot of damage," Paul Birch observed.

"I agree," Doctor Roth replied. "Mike, what's the choice for the best prognosis?"

"Resection," I replied. "It's possible to repair minor splenic lacs, but in anyone over eighteen, splenectomy is the preferred choice, based on overall outcomes."

"Mike is correct," Doctor Roth said. "Paul, this should be an easy one. Are you ready to perform your first splenectomy?"

"I am," Doctor Birch replied.

"Then switch places with me, and I'll assist."

The procedure was textbook, with no complications, and I was allowed to close, something I'd done several times. That boded well for my training rotation, which would start in June, as I had demonstrated proper technique and knowledge to move to the next phase, which would include performing initial incisions.

When I completed the last suture, Doctor Roth asked Paul to take the patient to recovery, as I had to remain on call. I was extremely happy I hadn't been called out of the surgery, as that was a distinct possibility, given we were short-staffed.

I had just changed into fresh scrubs when Sarah, the Charge Nurse, let me know that I was needed in the ED for a central line. I called to Todd, and we took the stairs down to the first floor and hurried down the corridor into the ED. I stepped into Trauma 3 to find Ghost and Clarissa working on a patient who had been in a construction accident. I quickly inserted the central line, then, at Ghost's request, performed a pericardiocentesis and finally performed a surgical assessment.

"I'll take him," I said. "Todd, call up and let them know we have a patient coming right up."

He made the call while Ghost filled me in on the vitals and treatment. Clarissa, Max, Todd, and I transported the patient to OR3, which was being hurriedly prepared by the nurses.

"What do we have, Mike?" Doctor Roth asked when my students and I joined him in the scrub room.

"Traumatic amputation of the left arm at the elbow; central line and two litres of plasma; fluid in the pericardium aspirated by pericardiocentesis; BP 90/50; tachy

at 110; intubated; PO<sub>2</sub> 96%; five of morphine in the field; tourniquet applied just under forty minutes ago by a co-worker. No recovery of the severed limb."

"Any other injuries?"

"None appreciated. Main concern is hypovolemic shock, but the tourniquet was applied almost immediately and the paramedics got plasma into him right away, along with IV saline."

"OK. It's a cleanup job, then. How much of the arm is left?"

"The humerus appears intact to the trochlea. I'm not sure if there's enough muscle to cover the bone."

"Tendons?"

"None appreciated on visual inspection."

"Julie, get the fluoroscope set up, please," Doctor Roth said to the circulating nurse.

Five minutes later, we were in the OR, and Doctor Ross began examining the patient's arm.

"What have you got for me today, Owen?" Kenneth Cole from Orthopedics asked.

"Traumatic amputation of the left arm at the elbow. Humerus is intact, there does not appear to be enough muscle to cover the end of the bone, and there's significant ligament and muscle damage all the way to the deltoid."

Doctor Cole joined Doctor Roth, and they viewed the fluoroscope together, then Doctor Cole performed a visual examination of the injury.

"I suggest we revise the amputation to facilitate a prosthesis," Doctor Cole said.

"I concur," Doctor Roth said. "Todd, we're done with the fluoroscope," Doctor Roth said. "Please store it. Julie, bone saw tray, please. Mike, no need for you and your students to stay."

"OK," I agreed.

I was disappointed, but I knew I had responsibility for consults, and with Doctor Cole in the OR, there were four surgeons, as Doctor Cole's Resident had come with him. My students and I left the OR and went to the lounge.

"I hear you played on the Milford chess team," I said to Erin. "I know a guy who played with you -- Larry Higgins."

"Our best player! He's a Grand Master now. I take it you met him at a tournament?"

"Yes, and then again when Doctor Saunders and I went to interview at UC medical school."

"He didn't get in," Erin said. "So he decided to go to nursing school. He's working at The Christ Hospital in Cincinnati."

"Feel free to refuse to answer, but I strongly suspect you knew the guy who invented 'strip chess'."

Erin laughed, "Oh my God, talk about crazy! I'm sure you're referring to Steve Adams, but it was his girlfriend, Jennifer, who invented it."

"That's the guy," I said. "Was Milford as crazy as the rumors say it was?"

"And then some!" she said, shaking her head. "But it was a lot of fun!"

"I bet! Harding County High was not like that, despite the best efforts of my closest guy friend and me!"

Erin laughed, "I'm pretty sure our High School wouldn't have been nearly as crazy without Steve and his female friends. He's in Chicago now, and from what I hear, he runs a computer company."

"Todd, where are you from?"

"Detroit. I went to University of Detroit Jesuit High School and Academy, an all guys' school. That kind of limited the craziness!"

"Bummer!" Erin declared with a soft laugh.

"Yeah."

I checked my watch and excused myself to call down to the ED to see if Clarissa was free for lunch. She checked, and five minutes later, we met in the cafeteria.

"Having fun with your new assignment?" I asked.

"I did NOT sign up for this! Did you have anything to do with it?"

"No. I only found out this morning when I spoke with Owen. Given the surgical team is already understaffed, losing a senior Resident is a big problem, so they yanked me out of the ED three months early."

"Did you see Doctor Gibbs and Doctor Lindsay?"

"Yes. Loretta regained some sensory function in her right leg, which is a hopeful sign. Shelly's labs look good. She asked me to bring her a pizza."

Clarissa laughed, "And?"

"I suggested she order delivery, and she wondered what Baker would think about that."

"I don't think he'd be amused! Anything I need to know about your med students?"

"They're all basically average," I said.

"How are you holding up?"

"OK. The weird thing is I wasn't scared. I think I was too focused on trying to save Tracy Sommers and the seventeen-year-old victim. I'm very curious to see what Sheriff Tomkins has to say tomorrow. I can't piece together a sequence of events."

"I'm curious, too," Clarissa said. "What did you say to Rachel?"

"Just that Bobby Junior's mom was hurt. I'm not sure how you explain something like that to a two-and-a-half-year-old."

"I'm not sure how you explain it to a thirty-year-old!"

"What's your opinion of gun control?" I inquired.



"An impossible task and the end result will be that only the bad guys and cops have guns."

"Clark would say that means ONLY bad guys have guns!" I observed.

"But you don't agree, right? You've always had good relationships with the police and deputies."

"Except when Angie was missing," I countered.

"That was Dean «сука» (*suka*), not the cops!" ("bitch")

"I almost never use Russian these days."

"That's because you've done the one thing that NOBODY has done since Napoleon -- surrendered to the French!"

"And I very much enjoyed the surrender ceremony!" I said with a smirk. "So much so that I was happy to reenact it multiple times!"

"Doctor Pig makes his appearance!" Clarissa exclaimed with a laugh.

"I make no apologies for enjoying sex with a hot French girl!"

"You made no apologies for enjoying sex with ME, Petrovich! And I'm a lesbian!"

"You have the right parts in the right places, Lissa!"

"As I said, Doctor Pig!"

"Nah, Doctor Pig would have drinks with Jill Kleist or Louise Rehling at .38 Special or have taken Deputy Nelson up on her offer to play doctor!"

"Emmy still has the hots for you?"

"What can I say?" I asked with a grin.

"I know how you could make Clark laugh and then cry!" Clarissa smirked.

"How would YOU know?" I asked with an arched eyebrow.

"Just an educated guess based on statistics!" Clarissa smirked.

"And one confirmed by Emmy years ago," I chuckled.

Clarissa laughed so hard she attracted attention of others in the cafeteria. I simply continued eating my lunch nonchalantly.

"You're serious?" Clarissa asked a minute later when she'd finally regained control.

"Deadly', I smirked.

"Can anyone join this party?" Sophia asked, coming up to the table.

"Sure," I said.

"I have to ask -- what caused Clarissa to laugh so hard?"

"Mike has a reference who confirms that it's NOT true what they say about bwack men!" Clarissa said and giggled for the first time in years.

Sophia smirked, "I could have told you that from personal experience! Well, at least with regard to Mr. 'they said you was hung'!"

"This convo just got WAY out of control!" I declared.

"Come on!" Sophia smirked. "You have to say 'and they was right!'"

"And this is where Doctor Mike says he needs to return to surgery!" I said, shaking my head.

"I heard they shuffled people around," Sophia said.

"I'm assigned to Emergency Medicine until the end of May," Clarissa said. "Mike is upstairs but handling consults."

"Have you been to see Doctor Gibbs and Doctor Lindsay?" Sophia asked.

"Yes," I replied. "Doctor Lindsay is doing well, and her liver function tests are all in range. Doctor Gibbs has recovered some of her sensory function in one leg, which is a good sign. And I hate to eat and run, but I do need to get upstairs to supervise my students prepping the next patient."

I left the cafeteria and returned to the surgical ward. The afternoon was routine, with two consults -- a rule-out appy and ingested coins -- neither of which resulted in admissions. At 5:00pm, I called home to let Kris know I was on my way home, that nothing was wrong, and that I'd explain once I arrived.



## **February 22, 1990, Circleville, Ohio**

"Overall, that sounds like a positive thing," Kris observed once I'd laid out the plans for the following three months.

"With regard to the schedule, yes, but you know me - I like the adrenaline rush that comes with Emergency Medicine."

"You'll just have to get 'high' on something else!" Kris said.

"My *other* rush comes from an activity which is increasingly complicated for the next six months!"

Kris laughed softly, "And yet, Doctor Forsberg says it's OK through the eighth month!"

"With some accommodation for your belly, which makes our preferred lovemaking position difficult!"

"Poor baby! He can have the «minou», but just not the way he prefers!"

"Despite what I said, it wasn't a complaint; it was an observation!"

"Well, this liberated French woman does NOT tolerate the usual antics by French men in such circumstances!"

"Nor does this 'reactionary' American!"

"Do you get hit on?" Kris asked.

"Occasionally," I said. "Interestingly, it's mostly cops because Becky and Kellie have put the word out to nurses and nursing students to stay away, which I appreciate. And no medical student who has enough brains to become a physician would do that at this point, given the changes to the rules."

"Male police?" Kris asked with a goofy smile.

"No!" I chuckled. "Detectives Rehling and Kleist, both of whom are divorced. I did get hit on by a guy once, many years ago. I politely declined, saying I was straight."

"Not Robby, right?"

I chuckled, "Robby and Lee flirted incessantly with me, to the point where Sophia called it 'foreplay' when he joked around. No, it was one of Milena's friends, and he was positive I was gay after two of Milena's female friends danced with me in a way that Sophia described as the hottest thing she'd ever seen where everyone was clothed! One of the girls was behind me, and one in front, and it was extremely obvious what they wanted. I declined, and that's when the guy hit on me."

Kris laughed, "Because no straight male would turn down a threesome with two hot girls?"

"That was his thinking. Let's just say that wasn't the only pair of girls I frustrated."

"Just how many opportunities did you have for having multiple girls at the same time?"

"Plenty!" I chuckled. "I revealed I had done that on two occasions, but, and I'm being completely honest, that was not my thing. I far prefer my one-on-one encounters with you!"

Kris smiled, "But a sexless *ménage à trois* is OK?"

"Before her final meltdown, Angie suggested that would be the case with whomever I married. I could see how you and she could say that about Clarissa,

especially given that she and I will eventually have a baby together. Artificially, of course."

"You love her more than anyone," Kris observed. "And no, I'm not jealous in any way. It's my little sister who is green with envy!"

I chuckled, "And yet, she has her eye on at least one boy at the Cathedral, so the crush will pass."

"Yes, of course! In my experience, they always do. The key is not to do something foolish because of what you Americans call 'puppy love'."

"I'm going to remind you that YOU are an American, my Franco-Russian partner!"

"And yet, I do not subscribe to many of the foolish ideas here, especially about guns."

"I actually had a brief discussion with Clarissa about that and pointed out that Clark would say the theory of 'only the government can have guns' results in *only* the bad guys having guns."

"Given the racism here, I can understand his point, but can you see mine?"

"If guns, like nuclear weapons, could simply disappear, human beings would still find ways to kill each other, both in small numbers and in large. Before nuclear weapons, we had World War I. How many died at the Battle of the Somme?"

"France lost at least 50,000 killed or missing, and the British Commonwealth nearly twice that many, including close to 20,000 on a single day. I don't know

how many of «Les Boches» were killed, but the total casualties were over a million."

"So, ten times Hiroshima or Nagasaki. I recall the number of German soldiers killed was over 150,000, which was more than either atomic bombing. Let's go back before machine guns -- how many French died in Napoleon Bonaparte's wars of conquest?"

"Close to two million French soldiers and civilians," Kris admitted. "And as many as five million from other countries."

"Who had most, if not all, of the guns?"

"You are VERY difficult, Mike," Kris said playfully.

"Thank you!" I declared. "Shall we make dinner and spend time together as a family before I take you to bed?"

"Yes!" Kris readily agreed.



## **February 23, 1990, McKinley, Ohio**

On Friday, at 1:00pm, the surgical staff who were not in an OR gathered in the lounge to watch the televised coverage of Sheriff Tomkins' press conference.

Ladies and gentlemen, I have a joint statement on behalf of Chief Donner and myself, then we will take questions.

At approximately 5:30pm on Monday, February 19, uniformed McKinley police officers responded to a domestic disturbance call made to 9-1-1. Upon arrival, police found

four gunshot victims, one of whom was deceased. Three victims were transported to Moore Memorial Hospital by the Hayes County Fire Department.

Detectives investigating the original disturbance call filed their final report yesterday with the following conclusions:

An adulterous, romantic relationship between a seventeen-year-old girl and fifty-six-year-old Jack Collins led to the minor girl being impregnated. When her father, Leroy Hoffman, discovered this, he confronted Mr. Collins by brandishing a handgun. The argument grew heated, and Kelly Collins, wife of Jack, retrieved a shotgun and advanced on the arguing men. The shotgun had not been cocked, but when she pointed it at Mr. Hoffman, he fired a round, striking her in the chest, killing her instantly.

Mr. Collins grappled Mr. Hoffman, and they struggled for the gun. The gun discharged, wounding Mr. Hoffman and leaving Mr. Collins in possession of the firearm. At that point, the minor and her older brother, Mark Hoffman, came upon the scene. Mark Hoffman drew a concealed handgun, and he and Mr. Collins engaged in a gun battle in which the minor girl was shot three times and her brother once, while Mr. Collins escaped any injury.

Police secured the scene, but unknown to them, Jack Collins Junior, age thirty-six, had left the scene and had made his way to the hospital in search of Mr. Hoffman. When he arrived at the hospital, he entered the Emergency Department through unsecured ambulance bay doors and was confronted by a nurse, who he shoved out of the way. He brandished the pistol and began looking for Mr. Hoffman.



At that point, he was confronted by Doctor Michelle Lindsay, who had just come out of a trauma room. He shot her once, in the stomach, then fired again, striking Doctor Loretta Gibbs in the back. At that point, members of law enforcement who were in treatment rooms responded. Mr. Collins took cover behind the nurses' station, and when he saw Deputy Tracy Sommers, he fired a single round, striking her in the temple, instantly killing her.

As he began to move, he was confronted by Deputy Scott Turner and Detective Jill Kleist, who each fired at him. Mr. Collins was struck by five rounds and died instantly, bringing the incident to an end.

Deputy Sommers, Deputy Turner, and Detective Kleist acted in the best tradition of law enforcement and brought the incident to an end with minimal loss of life.

The first question was the one I would have asked -- why there was no law enforcement presence in the corridor.

"Our practice, in such cases, is to secure the scene and to protect the individual victims. Detective Kleist, Deputy Turner, and Deputy Sommers were each in a treatment room. I didn't say this in my statement, but the time from when Mr. Hoffman brandished his firearm until he was shot by law enforcement was just under fifteen seconds. Mr. Collins was a former Army Ranger and was able to accurately discharge his handgun in what was, for him, a combat situation.

"Both Chief Donner and I have agreed that in future incidents, we will station at least one armed officer at the unlocked entrance. In addition, Moore Memorial will be employing off-duty members of law enforcement as security

in the Emergency Department. As those will all be sworn officers, they will be armed."

"That can't be the right solution," Sarah, the Charge Nurse, said. "Guns in the hospital?"

"There was a very tense debate about that," Owen Roth said. "That's why it's off-duty cops and deputies. We couldn't allow armed private security. It's not perfect, but the County Board insisted due to liability concerns."

"That seems like a bad reason to bring guns into the hospital," I said. "I mean, I get responding officers and deputies, but armed security? I'm not anti-gun, but it just seems wrong."

"To me, too," Doctor Roth agreed. "The Board approved money for full security doors for the ambulance bay in the new ED. They'll require a swipe card, but there will also be an emergency mechanical release on the inside in case the system fails. We might be able to dispense with permanent security at that point, but I wouldn't count on it."

"Swell," I said.

The rest of the press conference didn't shed any additional light on what happened except to fill in some other background details and to note that Deputy Sommers would be posthumously awarded a medal for gallantry. When it concluded, I still had a question that had not been asked nor answered -- how could the seventeen-year-old girl have been shot three times during the events described?



## February 24, 1990, Southern Ohio Correctional Facility, Lucasville, Ohio

I stopped short when I walked into the common room at the prison, seeing someone I hadn't seen for nearly eight years -- Charlie Fox, the rapist who had, for a day, been my roommate. I wondered if he recognized me in the cassock and with a beard, as I'd been clean-shaven when we'd met. He was with an older gentleman in a suit, who I suspected was his dad but who also might have been a Protestant pastor.

I also knew that Len Nelson was in the prison, but I'd heard he was in segregation due to incidents between a group of what amounted to neo-Nazis and black prisoners. I had zero desire to see him, and he was locked up at least until 2015, given his 'twenty-five to life' sentence. His association with the neo-Nazi's would likely mean he wouldn't get out after only twenty-five years.

"Morning, Frank," I said when I sat down at the table with him.

"Morning. I expected you tomorrow, with the deacon who brings communion to Nick. Did your schedule change because of the shootings?"

"Yes. One of the doctors who was shot was a surgeon, so they moved me out of the ED to surgery to help cover, and moved other doctors around to cover the ED, as the Chief Attending was one of the ones who was shot."

"How close were you to the shooting?"

"The Sheriff's Deputy was shot right in front of me, but I never saw the gunman until about twenty minutes after the police killed him. We were in a trauma room, and Deputy Sommers was responding to the gunfire when she was shot after opening the door of the trauma room."

"I'm glad you weren't hurt."

"Me, too!"

We played our usual games of chess, then the group gathered for prayers, including a new addition. Once the prayers were completed, I took time to talk to each man, including the new guy.

"Alan Edwards," he said, extending his hand.

"Doctor Mike Loucks," I said. "And also a chaplain, which I suspect is obvious."

"The black robes kind of gave that away."

"What are you in for?"

"I thought you would recognize the name. You were taking guitar lessons from Anicka Blahnik when I was arrested."

"A plea bargain of eight years for rape, if I recall correctly."

"I was a complete idiot, and I have nobody to blame but myself. Do you play in public at all?"

"When I have time. I'm in a band -- Code Blue -- with four friends. We play four or five gigs a year."

"What do you play?"

"Mostly covers of rock and pop from the 50s through the current day, though I also play some traditional Russian music on the balalaika."

"I recall Anicka saying you had significant voice talent."

"She and Milena both tried to convince me to sing with Milena and try out for parts in musicals, but I was pre-med, so I simply didn't have the time. Is there anything you need?"

"A time machine to go back and not allow a horny thirteen-year-old to convince me to do something I knew was wrong."

"Fresh out of those," I said.

"What church do you represent?"

"The Orthodox Church in America, whose heritage is the Russian Orthodox Church."

"Some of the best choral music ever written," he said. "The Divine Liturgy by Tchaikovsky is a beautiful masterpiece. The one by Rachmaninoff is almost as good. Do you sing at church?"

"I have, in the past, but again, it was time that interfered. Medicine is all-consuming."

"So is music," Alan observed.

"I agree. Do you have a chance to play?"

"Believe it or not, we have a small group that plays chamber music. I also fiddle, which is far more popular here than Classical."

"I can imagine."

"How often are you here?"

"Once a month. If there's anything you need, let me know, and I'll do my best to procure it or arrange it, with the obvious limitations."

"Thanks."

We shook hands, I said goodbye to the men, then left the prison to head home to Kris and Rachel.

### III. Appendectomy

#### February 26, 1990, McKinley, Ohio

The formal funeral for Deputy Sommers was conducted on Monday morning, but I wasn't able to attend due to my shift at the hospital. She received full honors from the Sheriff's Department, the McKinley Police Department, the Harding County Fire Department, and the Ohio State Patrol. The flags at every fire and police station in the county had been flown at half-mast for her, and every member of law enforcement and fire protection had worn a black band around their badges.

At the time I knew the funeral mass was to begin, I was in the lounge. I quietly recited the prayers for the departed, using the standard form rather than the abbreviated form used for non-Orthodox. She had, as I saw it, given her life defending and protecting our patient and the medical staff, and as such, deserved the full prayers. When I finished the prayers, I went to visit Loretta in the CCU.

"How are you doing this morning?" I asked.

"Feeling in both legs, but it's still limited, and I can't move them."

"That's an improvement," I replied. "You and I both know that the kind of improvement you're seeing is a very good sign."

"But not determinative."

"True, but it's a strong indication you'll be able to walk again, though possibly with the need of assistive devices."

"There goes my medical career."

"You don't know that, and neither do I! What have Vanderberg and Cohen said?"

"Wait and see, but they're encouraged by the fact that I have increased sensory function."

"There you go! How long are you in the CCU?"

"Until Friday, most likely, then I'll go to a rehab facility in Columbus."

"I'm going to ask for permission to escort you," I said.

"I appreciate it. Come see me tomorrow?"

"Of course. I'm going to see Shelly now. Is there anything I can get you?"

"A working set of legs."

"In time, Doctor," I said. "You know how this works."

Loretta rolled her eyes, "Easy for you to say from that side of the bedrail!"

"We doctors make the worst patients," I commiserated. "And I was bad before I became a doctor."

"Like most men!"

"Whatever!" I chuckled. "See you tomorrow."



I kissed her cheek, then left the CCU to head to Medicine, where Shelly was in a semi-private room with a young woman suffering from kidney failure.

"Morning, Shelly," I said. "How are you doing?"

"Better now that they moved me here, but I still haven't managed the pizza!"

"I'd *kill* for a pizza!" Cathy, the young woman in the other bed, exclaimed.

"And I'd be dead if I tried to sneak one in here! Tim Baker would have my butt in a sling!"

"Doctors are just no fun!" Cathy grouched.

"Shelly and I are fun!" I countered. "It's the Chief of Internal Medicine who's the problem here!"

"Damn straight!" Shelly agreed.

"Just how much fun?" Cathy asked with an arched eyebrow.

I held up my right hand. "About as far as this ring allows!"

"Wrong hand!" Cathy exclaimed.

"Correct hand for an Orthodox Christian," I replied.

"Well, there goes my idea of trading for a pizza!" she teased, causing both Shelly and me to laugh.

"No offense intended," Shelly said mirthfully, "but fired AND divorced? Nobody is THAT good!"

"You left out 'dead'," I chuckled, "because, despite her protestations of being French, my wife is VERY Russian in certain aspects of her personality!"

"Are you sure about that?" Cathy asked with a smirk.

I laughed again, "Positive, and no, that's not an opening for you to ask for a chance to prove it! Mind if I ask about your condition?"

"Polycystic kidney disease; I'm having a transplant later this week from my cousin. It was delayed by what happened last week. Where you there, too?"

I nodded, "I was in the trauma room Shelly -- Doctor Lindsay -- had just left, and where the Deputy was shot."

"Holy smokes!" Cathy exclaimed.

"If things go a certain way, Mike might assist with your surgery," Shelly said.

"Well, that would be one way to get him inside me!" Cathy smirked, once again causing both Shelly and me to laugh.

"You, young lady, are dangerous!" I chuckled.

"I'm a college student!" she exclaimed. "We're *supposed* to be dangerous! Being a sober, responsible adult can wait until *after* I graduate!"

"What's your major?" I asked. "I mean besides guys...or girls, for that matter."

Cathy laughed, "It would increase my chances of a date on Friday nights! Finance with a minor in computers. I plan to get my MBA and become a CPA, same as my dad."

"What year?"

"Junior at OSU, but my family lives here, so that's why I'm here instead of there. I took the semester off, but I'll take classes during the summer to make up and should graduate on time."

"My wife is at OSU," I said. "She's a poli-sci major and is planning a Master's in public administration."

"What's her name?"

"Kris Korolyov. She's on what amounts to a five-year plan because we'll have our first child together in June and plan the second one about two years from now."

"First together? You have other kids? Or she does?"

"I have a daughter with my first wife, who died the day our daughter was born."

"Holy smokes!" Cathy gasped. "I don't even know what to say."

"Most people don't," Shelly said. "I can say this because I know Mike really well, but it was just one of those rare, random things which there was no way to detect or prevent. It was genetic, similar to your kidney condition."

"Is it OK to ask what happened?"

"In layman's terms, a blood vessel in her brain burst in an area where it caused her heart to stop."

"Whoa!" Cathy gasped. "Unreal."

"Surreal is more like it," I said. "I was a medical student, and all I could do was stand and watch helplessly as the medical team tried to resuscitate her. I'm sorry to cut this short, but I have to get back to work."

"Sorry if I upset you," Cathy said.

"You didn't. I need to get back to my students. Shelly, I'm glad to see your liver enzymes are completely normal. When are they kicking you loose?"

"Friday."

"And when can you come back to work?"

"I have to complete my psych evals, and Doctor Roth has to clear me medically. I'd be happy for you to do the exam."

"I BET!" Cathy teased. "He's hot!"

Shelly laughed, "And taken! I'm no homewrecker! But I trust him to give me the benefit of the doubt, unlike the headshrinkers."

"Any chance you can see someone outside the hospital?"

"No. Owen got quite a bit of guff for allowing you to do that, but he made it stick."

"I had no idea, but I guess I should have known, given my relationship with them."

"Washouts who couldn't even Scramble for dermatology!" Shelly exclaimed.

"On that note, I'm headed back to the lounge! I'll come see you tomorrow."

"And me?" Cathy asked.

"If you're here, then I will."

"Sadly, for two more days before the surgery, then a weeklong recovery."

"See you both tomorrow," I said.

I left the room and walked towards the surgical ward when my pager went off, signifying a consult in the ED. Rather than stop and use the phone, I simply picked up my walking pace and reported to the nurses' station.

"Doctor Casper needs you in Trauma 2 for a rule-out appy," Karli said.

"On my way."

I went to the lounge and let both Erin and Todd know they could accompany me to the ED.

"Morning, Ghost," I said when we talked in. "What do we have?"

"John Smythe, twenty-six, presents with typical signs of acute appendicitis. Ultrasound scan confirms."

"Let me take a quick look," I said. "You know the drill."

"A snot-nosed Resident has to confirm the diagnosis of an Attending!" Ghost teased.

"Pretty much!" I agreed, stepping over to the trauma table. "Good morning, Mr. Smythe. I'm Doctor Mike from surgery, and as Doctor Casper irreverently put it,

I need to confirm that you're a candidate for surgery. As we're a teaching hospital, I'd like my Sub-Intern, Erin, to perform the exam."

"She's gorgeous, Doc!" he said quietly, then louder, added. "Sure!"

"Erin, physical exam and ultrasound, please."

"Right away, Doctor Mike!" she exclaimed, sounding almost giddy.

She performed the basic exam, then, with guidance from me, the ultrasound.

"What do you see?" I asked.

"Enlargement, along with free fluid in the right iliac fossa. That, along with the other symptoms, is determinative. A surgical case."

"Indeed it is. Call upstairs and let them know we'll be bringing him up. Then call for an orderly."

She moved to the phone to place the call.

"Are you going to do the surgery?" John asked me.

"As Doctor Casper put it, I'm still a 'snot-nosed Resident,' so I'll assist, but a fully-trained surgeon will perform the surgery."

"How long have you been a doctor?"

"About nine months," I replied. "Surgeons train for about seven years, some longer, if they specialize. Let me explain the procedure to you, then we'll go over the consent forms."

I went over the steps of the procedure, along with the risks, then asked Todd to walk Mr. Smythe through the consent form, which he did. The orderly arrived just as that was completed, I signed the surgical admission form, clipped it onto the chart, then we headed upstairs. After handing Mr. Smythe over to the nurses, my students and I went to scrub.

"How much of this do you feel comfortable doing?" Doctor Aniston asked.

"I know the steps and assisted Doctor Blake as second surgeon on one last July. I've seen several since."

"Not the question I asked," Doctor Anniston said.

"I would be comfortable performing each step, so long as I was under close supervision and could ask for assistance."

"Then you take the lead."

"As a PGY1?" I asked.

"You can say 'no'..."

"Contrary to the opinions of numerous young women over the years, I'm not a complete idiot!"

Erin and the two nurses in the room all laughed, and Todd nodded his commiseration.

"A problem every guy has, no matter what!" Doctor Aniston agreed.

"My gay friends didn't," I said. "But otherwise, yeah."

"Being gay limits your opportunities for being an idiot," Nurse Linda declared.

"Doctor Aniston," I said. "When I assisted Doctor Blake, my medical student was allowed to close the dermis and epidermis. I'd like Miss Jackson to do that; she's signed off for unsupervised suturing."

"Seriously?!" Erin gasped.

"Seriously. Doctor Aniston?"

"Let's see how things go; if there are no complications, I'll allow it. Miss Jackson, you'll suction for us. Now, everyone scrub in!"

We did and went into the operating room together, with Doctor Aniston directing me to the primary surgeon's spot.

Doctor Bernard, the anesthesiologist, raised an eyebrow but didn't say anything.

"Hi, Mr. Smythe," I said. "Contrary to what I said before, I'll be the lead surgeon with Doctor Aniston here watching me like a hawk."

"You're in very good hands, Mr. Smythe," Doctor Aniston said. "We're a teaching hospital, and Doctor Mike is ready for this. He's assisted before and knows the procedure."

"Go for it, Doc!" Mr. Smythe said.

"Put him under, please," I said to Doctor Bernard.

He did, and two minutes later, announced that the patient was sedated and had stable vitals.



"Are you sure about this, Bob?" Doctor Bernard asked. "Mike's a PGY1."

"I'd let him perform the procedure on my son," Doctor Aniston said. "Good enough for you?"

"You're the boss."

"Mike, let's begin," Doctor Aniston said. "Tell me each step before you perform it. If anything out of the ordinary happens, I'll decide if I need to take over. This should be perfectly routine, as he appears in excellent health and is in good shape."

I nodded, took a deep breath, and looked to Nurse Linda, "10-blade, please."

"I'm going to begin with a transverse incision parallel to McBurney's point, incising the epidermis and dermis."

"Proceed," Doctor Aniston directed.

I made the incision as I'd seen Doctor Blake and others do, then handed the scalpel back to Linda.

"Retract, please, and I'll use the Bovie to dissect down to the external oblique aponeurosis, then I'll open the aponeurosis, exposing the internal oblique muscle."

"Continue."

"Bovie, Nurse," I requested.

I successfully dissected down to the muscle, then returned the Bovie and asked for a scalpel to open the aponeurosis.

"Retraction, please," I said to Doctor Aniston who placed a second retractor in the surgical site.

"Now I'll divide the muscles, then locate the appendix," I said.

"Continue," Doctor Anniston directed.

I divided the muscles, and Doctor Anniston shifted the retractors.

"Forceps, please, Nurse."

I grasped the peritoneum with the forceps, made an incision, and located the appendix.

"Suction, please, Erin," I instructed.

She cleared away the fluid.

"Babcocks, please, Nurse," I requested.

Linda handed me the forceps, and I grasped the taeniae coli and advanced until the appendix was externalized.

"Appendix is inflamed and enlarged," Doctor Aniston declared. "Proceed with excision, Mike."

"Next is dissecting the mesoappendix," I said.

"Continue."

I did that, then asked Linda for clamps, which I attached to the appendiceal vessels.

"Next, I'll divide the appendiceal and ligate them with sutures."

"Correct," Doctor Anniston said. "You're doing great, Mike."

I divided vessels, then asked Linda for the needle driver and silk sutures, and used them to ligate the blood vessels, then removed the clamps.

"Suction, please," I said to Erin.

She did that, and I examined the surgical field.

"No leaks," I said.

"I concur," Doctor Anniston agreed.

"Excision and then invert the stump into the cecum."

"Proceed."

I excised the inflamed appendix and dropped it into a metal basin. Next, using forceps, I inverted the stump into the cecum.

"Very good, Mike," Doctor Anniston said. "No rupture, no involvement of any surrounding tissue. Nice and clear. You may close; your call on closing the dermis and epidermis."

"Erin," I inquired, "tell me how you would close this incision."

"I would begin with an antiseptic lavage, then close each of the three muscle layers separately with running absorbable sutures. There was no rupture, so no drain is necessary. I'd close the dermis with 3-0 subcuticular absorbable sutures, then close the epidermis with basic mattress sutures."

"Very good," I said. "Doctor Anniston, if you would move aside, and Todd, if you would take the suction, Miss Jackson will assist me, then close the dermis and epidermis. Linda, surgical closure tray to me, please."

"A Fourth Year? Suturing?" Doctor Bernard asked.

"Owen instructed us to be more aggressive in our training," Doctor Anniston said. "Miss Jackson is one of our top draft choices for the Match. And we're short surgeons, too. Mike and I are both comfortable."

"It's your rodeo; I'm just along for the ride," Doctor Bernard said.

I closed the muscle layers, then turned the patient over to Erin.

"Erin, step by step," I said. "There are no prizes for speed. If you have questions, ask; if you are not confident, say so, and I'll close the final layers."

"I can do this with your supervision," she said confidently.

"Then proceed," I said.

She took her time, similar to the way I had done the exact same thing back in July, though I'd been an actual Resident at the time. I watched extremely closely, as did Doctor Anniston, to ensure she completed the procedure correctly, and he and I both offered advice as she worked to close the incision.

"Nicely done, Miss Jackson," Doctor Anniston said. "Neat, evenly spaced sutures with good tension."

"We're finished," I said. "Doctor Bernard, please terminate anesthesia. Erin and Todd, once Doctor Bernard disconnects Mr. Smythe, please escort Mr. Smythe to Recovery. I'll be along shortly."

Doctor Aniston and I moved to the scrub room while the others prepared Mr. Smythe for transport.

"There is going to be blowback," I said quietly.

"Well, Frank can complain to his Chief, but Owen cleared this with Cutter, so we're good. How do you feel?"

"Pumped!" I replied. "But not nearly as pumped as Erin! I just hope the Match gods are kind to us."

"Why?"

"She broke up with her boyfriend, who is here in McKinley, just before she had to submit her Match list. She's from Cincinnati, and Shelly is concerned she listed those hospitals ahead of us."

"She could technically resubmit her list," Doctor Anniston said. "Wednesday is the deadline for late submissions. She'd need to pay the fee for late registration, but she could submit a revised list."

"Where did we list her?" I asked.

"Third after Ryan Harrison and Mary Anderson."

"That's rough," I said. "Hospital preferences take precedence, and even if she lists us first, a hospital in Cincinnati might snatch her.. We know Mary will Match for Trauma Surgery because we put her first, and she put us first. Can we revise to put Erin second?"

"Let me speak to Owen. Do you know where else Ryan tried to Match?"

"He had five other interviews, all in Columbus or Dayton."

"OK. Erin can't hurt herself if she simply swaps us for another program, but you know the rules, right?"

"Yes. I can't expressly tell her we listed her, but I can encourage her to change her list, which will convey the message."

"Exactly. It's a dumb system, and we really ought to be allowed to tell the students."

"My proposal is that a hospital receive two or three draft choices for students at their affiliated medical school. That would save everyone time and effort because we know Mary Anderson knows she's going to Match for the only available slot for trauma surgery. It's really silly to pretend that position is actually competitive."

"That's actually a good idea, which is why it will never fly!" Doctor Anniston said with a grin.

"Trotsky was right!" I said with a grin of my own.

"Trotsky?"

"He said the bureaucracy would betray the revolution, and he wasn't wrong."

"Amen, Brother. Go change and check on your patient. Leave me your procedure book, and I'll fill it out."

"Thanks," I replied.

That was a nice thing to have, but I needed more practice, better training, and my Board certification before I could perform even that simple procedure on my own. That said, I was WAY ahead of any other Resident, including some PGY2s who were on the 'old' program.

I went to the locker room, changed into fresh scrubs, put on my baptismal cross and wedding ring, then headed to Recovery. I verified Mr. Smythe's vitals, then asked Todd to sit with him while Erin and I stepped into the corridor.

"Thank you, thank you, thank you!" she gushed. "I'd hug you, but the rules..."

"I appreciate the sentiment," I replied. "What you just experienced is Moore Memorial changing the way surgical training is done. You did something today most PGY2s haven't done -- full closure on a procedure. You won't see that at any other hospital, and we hope you Match here. I'm not sure if you're aware, but you can change your Match program rankings until 5:00pm on Wednesday. If you didn't list us first, we hope you'll consider paying the small fee and changing your rankings."

"I want to ask a question that I don't think I can ask," Erin said.

"And it's one I cannot answer if you do ask. You're an intelligent young woman who's in the top five in her class, so I think you can infer what you can't ask, and I can't say."

"I'm going to assume someone told you I came to the medical school because of my boyfriend, and that we broke up."

"That is the scuttlebutt. I also know you interviewed at several hospitals in Cincinnati because you're from Milford."

"You're very well-informed!"

"If you haven't noticed, the hospital grapevine is very effective!"

"Oh, I've noticed! If I wanted to change my ranking order, what would I need to do?"

"I believe you'll need to fax it to them by Wednesday at 5:00pm Eastern time. There's a phone number on the letter you received saying you were registered to check the process."

"Is there a way to guarantee I Match here?"

There was, but because she wasn't first on our list, the only way to ensure she could Match was to list *only* Moore Memorial, which was a risky proposition if, somehow, she didn't Match with us.

"Only a risky one," I replied. "I don't advise it."

Erin nodded, "Let me think about it."

"That's all I can ask. Go sit with Mr. Smythe and call me when he comes around. Todd can have his lunch."

"OK."



I headed to the nurses' station, arranged for a room for Mr. Smythe, then went to the lounge. About forty minutes later, Erin called to say Mr. Smythe had come out of his anesthesia. I checked him, signed the chart to release him, and then had Erin call for an orderly to take Mr. Smythe to his room. I sent her to lunch, then called to see if Clarissa was available. She wasn't, so I went to the cafeteria alone, and when I saw Ghost, I went to sit with him and Maria Vega from Internal Medicine.

After lunch, I let Doctor Aniston know about my conversation with Erin, and he promised to speak to Owen Roth once the lengthy surgery he was performing was complete. The afternoon was routine, with three consults, two of which resulted in admission for surgery, but not emergency surgery, and those cases would be dealt with on Tuesday or Wednesday. At 5:00pm, I left the hospital and headed home to Kris and Rachel.



## **February 27, 1990, McKinley, Ohio**

"How in the world did you get to do an appy and a Fourth Year close?" Shelly Lindsay asked incredulously when I walked into her semi-private room on Tuesday.

"I'm just that good," I replied haughtily but with a smirk. "Who blabbed?"

"Erin, when she stopped in to see me before she went home yesterday. She was so happy that if you weren't married and it wasn't against the rules..."

I laughed, "Yeah, yeah."

"Wait!" Cathy interrupted. "It's against the rules to fool around?"

"Doctors with medical students, yes; patients, too!"

"While they're under your care," Shelly said with a smirk, stirring the pot.

"Troublemaker! And to answer your question, despite my reputation, I didn't ask. Bob Anniston asked me. Well, about the appy I brought up. I asked if Erin could close the dermis and epidermis, and she did show her gratitude in a very satisfying way!"

"Smart ass!" Shelly declared. "I know it wasn't that because you're faithful to a fault!"

"I fail to see how fidelity can ever be a fault," I replied. "But, no, of course not. She paid the late fee and re-ordered her ranking list for the Match. Owen re-ordered our list to put her second. That gives us a good chance of getting her, though you know there are no guarantees. I wish we had my draft picks."

"You and every hospital associated with a medical school! I'm assuming you had a very careful conversation?"

"Yes. She drew the correct inferences."

"Can the outsider inquire what the heck you're talking about?" Cathy asked.

"When medical students are close to graduation," I replied, "they interview with hospitals for Residency programs. After those interviews, the student prepares a ranked list of programs where they would like to Match. The hospitals prepare lists of students they would like to hire. All of that is fed into a big computer which spits out a list of Matches such that it is impossible for anyone to have a better available Match. It's something you might be aware of with a minor in computers -- the stable marriage problem."

Cathy nodded, "OK, I know that one. From what you're saying, you can't share the information?"

"The student can tell the hospital that they listed them and in what ranked order, but the hospital is forbidden to tell the student that they are on the list, let alone their rank on it. That's meant to prevent gaming the system. If I, as a student, know for a fact that a hospital listed me in their first slot, I could submit a list of one hospital and be guaranteed one of those two spots."

"That only works if the hospital's list is given more weight. Otherwise, you could have multiple students put the program first, and some other factor would be needed to decide."

"Hospital preferences are paramount," I replied. "The one possible exception is a married couple, as they are matched together in the same hospital or the same city, which changes the calculations a bit, though a strong and weak partner cannot improve the weak partner's Match."

"So what happens if you don't like where you Match?"

"You're out of luck," Shelly said. "It's there or nowhere. If you decline, you can't Scramble or Match. It's possible to find a program after everything is done, but it'll be a lesser program in an undesirable location. You know, dermatology in International Falls, Minnesota, or something like that. It's not like a sports draft where you can hold out, either. In order to participate in the Match, you agree to accept the assignment at the salary offered. If you don't, you're basically out. Permanently."

"So what did you say, if I can ask?" Cathy inquired.

"I simply talked up our program and said we'd be pleased to have her and reminded her she had until 5:00pm Eastern tomorrow to change her list."

"And that doesn't break the rules?"

"No," Shelly said. "A hospital may express interest in the student beyond inviting them for an interview. What they cannot do is promise the student a listing, reveal that they are on the ranked list, or reveal the ranking order."

"Doctor Mike, was this your first choice?"

"Absolutely, and I was positive I was theirs. I mean, how could I not be when I designed the new program that was created!"

"Mike cheated!" Shelly exclaimed. "And we're ALL jealous about that!"

"I'm only jealous about his wife!" Cathy declared.

"You and half the nurses in the hospital!" Shelly exclaimed. "The other half simply don't care that he's married!"

"And on *that* note, I'm going back to the surgical ward! See you both tomorrow."

"Do you get to participate in my surgery tomorrow?" Cathy asked.

"No. I can't do scheduled procedures because I have to be on-call for the Emergency Department. I'll come see you on Thursday, OK?"

"OK."

I left the room and headed back to the surgical ward.



## February 28, 1990, McKinley, Ohio

Because of my revised schedule, I had rearranged my call with Doctor Mercer to be at lunch rather than in the morning.

"How has your week been?" Doctor Mercer asked.

"Fine."

"No nightmares or feelings of dread?"

"No. I know this might sound odd, but it feels like just another day in the ED."

"Which means either you have ice water in your veins or you're suppressing your emotions."

"Given my history, I'm going to go with the former. Nobody shot at me, Doctor Mercer."

"Fran, please. But you saw someone shot and killed in front of you."

"I did. And over the past five years, I've seen over a hundred people die before my eyes, sometimes after bloody accidents, sometimes after horrible burns, sometimes from brain bleeds."

"You did have an emotional reaction to that one."

"Yes, of course. You know the automatic defense mechanism of doctors who work in the ED -- we have to turn off our emotions. People who can't, don't make it."

"Yes, and many of them bottle it and resort to alcohol or illicit drugs to compensate."

"Prayer and church do that for me," I replied. "They always have; well, except when church was the stressor. But given my role, that's no longer the case and unlikely to recur."

"There's no chance of you being ordained again?"

"It's generally against the canons and would require extreme «ekonomia» by Bishop JOHN, and that would create a potential firestorm. But even if he were willing to do that, and he might be, Kris would refuse."

"Would that cause tension in your marriage?"

"The opposite, actually. It would save me from having to refuse my bishop!"

"So it's not something you want?"

"Not a chance. And I really prefer not having to say 'no' to my bishop, especially when he blames me for his enthronement!"

"How are you to blame?"

"I orchestrated it together with my grandfather! I knew he was a godly man as a celibate priest and was exactly what was needed after the nightmare with his predecessor. Bishop JOHN is looking to get even!"

"You're joking!"

"Of course I am! But it's a joke between him and me as well. I know, at some point, he's going to ask, and I can truthfully say that Kris is adamantly opposed to the idea."

"How are things at the hospital?"

"Very good. On Monday, I performed the first-ever appendectomy by a PGY1."

"Be careful you don't overreach, Mike."

"It was a textbook case, and one of our most senior surgeons was right there with me, and I had to declare each step before I started it. It was a perfectly routine procedure. Part of it is my special training program, part of it is that we're shorthanded because our best Resident is recovering from surgery after being shot, and part of it is that I'm just that good!"

Doctor Mercer laughed, "Well, you have the surgeon's ego, that's for sure!"

"And you know I said that to tweak you."

"You did, but you also believe it and have confidence in your own skills, or they'd never have let you do it."

"That's true. I gave my Fourth Year a chance to do something that most Fourth Years never do -- suture. There was a bit of blowback, but because the Medical Director and Chief Surgeon had approved, nothing came of it."

"Blowback?"

"The anesthesiologist objected to a PGY1 and a Fourth Year performing the entire procedure. He complained to his Chief, who lodged an objection with the Medical Director. Nothing came of that because of the approval, but also because my training program is special. I was already doing procedures that weren't the norm for PGY1s in the ED. And that's going to be the case for the new PGY1 in June or July, depending on when she chooses to start."

"Change is difficult for most people, and doctors tend to be very averse to changing training programs."

"Tell me about it! I'm in a completely new program, and I've heard the complaints. But I don't mind because the doctors who matter are behind the changes. There are other changes, too, which make a lot of sense, including having Residents in Internal Medicine complete an eight-week rotation in the ED during their first year, and are covered by someone from the ED. The same is true for pediatric Residents, but that was postponed to next year because of scheduling concerns in Pedes."

"Have you talked through the events of the day minute by minute?"

"Twice. Once with law enforcement, and then once with the internal review."

"How did you feel while doing that?" Doctor Mercer asked.

"The only word I can think of that applies is 'clinical'."

"I'd say that's par for the course for you. Is there anything you feel you need to talk about?"

"Not really, no."

"I have a question, which I probably should have asked before, but after you read me off last August, I'm somewhat surprised you got in touch."

"Put that PhD to work and figure it out," I challenged.

She was quiet for a full minute before she answered.



"Because for me, you're a known quantity, and you could be yourself without raising any red flags. And after you read me off and challenged my methods, you were positive that I wouldn't say anything I couldn't defend before the Medical Board. And if you were your typical self, I'd sign off because I could say that you were acting 'normal', for want of a better word."

"Exactly right. But there's one other important point, which you probably either won't get or, if you do, would be reluctant to say."

"That pretty much telegraphs it," Doctor Mercer said. "The one topic I always avoid, if at all possible. Your faith."

"And I'm going to remind you that healing, of whatever kind, has to be holistic -- body, mind, and soul, or spirit, if you prefer. I've forgiven you for Angie because you engaged in a public act of «metanoia», but that only goes so far. After the hearing, you told me that Doctor Paulus had taken you to task. So I come back to the question I asked you in Lou's last August -- what are you going to do about it?"

"Whatever else is true, I have to follow the standard of care, just as you do. I know you're a major rebel, and you push the edge of the envelope, but you also have limits and restrictions. You seem to think I don't, and that's simply not the case. I do agree that, at times, I had tunnel vision, but my outcomes were, in the main, positive.

"My difficulty was always with the outliers, and it still is. You and one other male patient defy basically any categorization, and trying to apply *any* norms to either of you failed miserably. What that tells me is that when a patient defies categorization, I can't apply any of the standard methods. I doubt that answer will satisfy you, but that is as far as I can go."

"Tell Steve Adams hello for me," I chuckled.

"How the..." Doctor Mercer began but then stopped mid-syllable. "Sorry, I can't say anything."

"It's OK, Fran," I said. "I dated Dona Bingham, and Angie's friend Anna was one of Steve's girlfriends. I met Larry Higgins in Cincinnati when I interviewed at UofC, and I've spoken to Doctor Al Barton. I met Steve's then future wife, Jessica, when she was a Second Year at Indiana University, and my current Fourth Year played on the Milford Chess team when he was there. I also met his Swedish girlfriend, Pia, when Elizaveta and I were in Europe."

"Oh for Heaven's sake!" Doctor Mercer laughed. "I'd accuse you of pulling my leg, but if you know those names... Have you met him?"

"No. I expect, someday, we'll cross paths, But given everything they've told me and your reaction when I asked about the rules to 'strip chess' when I was a Sophomore, I put it all together. Given the rumors I hear, he had to be the other patient."

"You know I can't discuss that!"

"Of course. Anyway, going back to my holistic point, you admitted your error, and as such, what's in the past is in the past. A clean slate, as it were."

"Forgive and forget?"

"In essence, yes, though 'forget' doesn't mean quite the same thing as 'not remember', but instead means 'not hold against'. To say otherwise would create an impossible contradiction."

"How so?"

"How could an omniscient God forget anything?"

"An interesting point," Doctor Mercer said. "But what about asking God to remember?"

"In that case, it means 'call to mind' or 'give conscious thought to'. Think about how we use it -- if we remember something, it's because it wasn't in our active memory but lying passive or dormant until called upon. We have many memories like that - they're stored and never come to mind unless triggered by some event or we set our mind on them. So, God knows all, but we're asking him to actively think about us. And that's true in both our faiths.

"What I'm saying is that human beings, besides being *Homo sapiens* are also *Homo religiosus*, not in the medieval or liberal Protestant understanding of that word, but that the taxonomic 'wise man' is also 'religious man', or perhaps better *Homo pneumatikós* or 'spiritual man', mixing Greek into the Latin for clarity of what I mean. You can't treat the «ψυχή» (*psyché*) without also treating the «σάρκα» (*sarka*) and the «πνεύμα» (*pneúma*) -- psyche, flesh, and spirit. I'd go further and say you have to treat the «νοῦς» (*nous*) as well."

"That's the concept of the true mind, right?"

"Yes. The mind's eye, if you will, without which we cannot fully apprehend God's energies, or what Roman Catholics and Protestants incorrectly refer to as 'grace'. It is the part of us that, according to Buddhism, can achieve total awareness or enlightenment -- the «ātman» or essential self. But the theology lesson isn't important. What's important is treating a patient holistically.

"I know your arguments against my position, and in one sense, I agree, but in another, I strenuously disagree. Do you have to walk a fine ethical line? You bet! But could you treat me in ANY way without understanding my faith? I don't believe so, and I would wager you've had other patients with strongly held

religious views. Ignoring that does the patient a disservice and could even cause harm. I think we can dispense with the obvious examples, don't you?"

"There's no need to rehash the conversation from August. I hear you, Mike, but that's a minefield."

"And one you're called to traverse. Find a way, Fran. If I can do it, you can do it. But it's impossible for you to treat *Homo pnevmatikós* without taking his *pnévma* into account."

"All good points. And based on our conversation, I'm going to say we don't need to speak again on the topic of the shootings. I would like to talk from time to time; in fact, Doctor Paulus suggested it."

"And that caused you to think she's certifiable, right? At least for an instant?"

"Longer," Doctor Mercer said with a soft laugh. "But she said something important -- you challenge me, and I've always learned more when I'm challenged."

"I think that's true for most of us," I replied.

"Have you seen Angie?"

"At church a few weeks ago, and Kris, Rachel, and I are having dinner with her and her family on Saturday."

"Let me know how she's doing, please."

"I will. I'm sorry to end this call, but I need to grab a quick bite before my lunch break ends or I'm paged."

"Call me in a few weeks, please."

"Will do."

We said 'goodbye', I hung up, and went to the cafeteria to grab a sandwich and an apple.



## IV. Loretta, Shelly, and Angie

**February 28, 1990, McKinley, Ohio**

"Hi, Petrovich!" Clarissa exclaimed when she walked into the surgical lounge on Wednesday afternoon.

"Hey, Lissa! What's up?"

"I'm on a late lunch break, so I decided to slum!"

"The slums are up one floor, at the north end of the building."

That was where Psych had their ward.

Clarissa laughed, "No surprise you'd think that! Where are your toddlers?"

"Doing toddler stuff! Prepping for afternoon rounds."

"How did your call with Doctor Mercer go?"

"She admitted she made errors with regard to me and one other patient."

"Angie?"

"No, besides Angie. Dona's, Anna's, and Pia's ex."

Clarissa laughed, "The kid from Milford was seeing her?"

"Apparently, but keep that to yourself."

"Of course. What was the gist of the conversation?"

"That her approach to psychology is wrong, and she'll make mistakes with anyone who is spiritual because she's put that part of the person completely off limits, and she's not treating them holistically. In the end, it's the same argument I make about medical care in the hospital -- specialization is necessary, but it's the enemy of holistic treatment."

"I think you're going to beat that dead horse for the rest of your career."

"The horse isn't dead," I said. "And I don't think I'm tilting at windmills, either. I think we can bring about change, but it'll be slow. Believe it or not, I can be patient."

"That'll be the day!"

"I did say 'can'," I retorted.

"Yeah, yeah," Clarissa said, rolling her eyes.

"How are you liking the ED?" I asked.

"It's not what I signed up to do," Clarissa replied, "but I don't think Doctor Gibbs or Doctor Lindsay signed up to be shot."

"Life does not deal us the cards we want; we have to play the hand we're dealt."

"True. I hear Doctor Gibbs is going to rehab in Columbus on Friday."

"She is," I confirmed. "I wanted to take her, but Doctor Roth nixed that because we're already short a surgeon."



"Another helicopter ride?"

"Actually, if it were, then I'd go because the ED can't spare a flight surgeon for a non-critical case. But she's going by private ambulance service."

"I stopped in to see her yesterday; what's your take?"

"Having feeling in her legs is a very good sign. Nerve function below the injury is a strong indicator of at least partial recovery. It's likely she'll be able to walk, but she might need some kind of assistive device. Shelly is being released on Friday, and as soon as Psych clears her, she'll be back. She wanted me to do her physical."

"Who knew?" Clarissa smirked.

"Lissa..."

"Sorry. Why?"

"Because she believes I'll give her the benefit of the doubt, and that's precisely why it won't be me."

"True. I'm not saying you'd fib, but for anything that was a judgment call, you'd see it her way. Did you hear the rumor they hired a Chief of Emergency Medicine?"

"Yes, and allegedly from a suburban Chicago hospital. But until they announce it, who knows? It should have been Loretta, but she's out of commission for several months, most likely."

"That sucks," Clarissa observed. "On the plus side, you know who your Chief is, and the Medical Director is the one who approved the trauma surgery program when he was Chief Surgeon."

"That's why my only concern about who filled the slot was about Loretta. Sadly, I don't think they were willing to put a woman in charge of a major department."

"Or a minor one, except the Nursing Director!" Clarissa declared. "The OB chief is a guy, for Pete's sake!"

"At least Norm Zenker isn't a complete Neanderthal like the dinosaur who ran OB at Good Samaritan. And I bet when Zenker retires in a few years, one of the women Attendings is hired. If leadership, except nursing, remains all male, that'll attract EEOC attention."

"As it should!"

"So long as we don't reduce standards, I have no problems. You know my mentors have mostly been female."

"Anicka, Milena, Loretta, Shelly, me..." Clarissa said.

"Among others," I replied. "In any event, I'd say Shelly is on track for Chief Surgeon."

"Can you imagine the heads that will explode if that happens?"

"Mo Rafiq is gone," I said. "I don't think any of the rest would have their gonads shrivel reporting to Shelly, especially after she literally took one for the team!"

"I know you have ice water in your veins, Petrovich, but I can't believe how calm you are about it."

"I was born to be a trauma surgeon. I'm just glad it's not in 'Hawkeye Pierce' conditions."

"True. I need to get back."

We hugged and she left. A minute later, my students returned from prepping for afternoon rounds. The afternoon was largely uneventful, and at the end of rounds, Doctor Roth asked me to come to his office.

"How are you doing being out of the ED?"

"You know that's my natural habitat, but I knew this was part of the training. I miss it, but I need the skills you and the other surgeons will teach me over the next five years."

"I actually wanted to discuss with you how we'll go about training Mary Anderson."

"The biggest challenge is how she learns the procedures if she's stationed in the ED and handling consults."

"That's exactly what we identified. Bob Anniston suggested that for the first three months, you and Mary should be assigned the same shift so you can teach her procedures for central lines, chest tubes, pericardiocenteses, tracheostomies, and escharotomies. At that point, you'd switch to the alternating rotations."

"I think that makes sense; my concern is my surgical training."

"According to Bob, you were perfect on your first surgery."

"Because literally nothing went wrong!"

Doctor Roth nodded, "The length of the program is, at least in part, intended to ensure you see as many things go wrong as possible so you're able to deal with them when you're the senior surgeon in the OR. You're way ahead of the game, Mike. The next three months will, in effect, make up for the three you'll spend in the ED. Same shift as you have now, and one of the new Residents will cover nights. That is unless you have some objection."

"I think it makes sense, given only a surgeon can teach Mary the procedures."

"Thanks for being flexible."

"You're welcome. Have you heard anything about the new Chief of Emergency Medicine?"

"Probably just the same rumors you have. Cutter hasn't said anything to me, but I'd expect an announcement in the next week."

"It should be Loretta," I said. "Northrup did it as a desk job, and given the new ED, that's what it will be for the next year."

"She'll be undergoing intensive rehab for at least two months, and there is no guarantee she'll walk again. She won't be reinstated until she finishes rehab, assuming she's able to practice emergency medicine at that point. We can't do the rehab here, and even after all the upgrades over the next five years, there are no plans for a rehab clinic here."

"All logical, but it still feels wrong."

"I'd worry if you didn't think that. Your heart's in the right place, Mike. In the end, though, we have a hospital to run, and there are major changes coming down the pike."

"How long will Shelly be out?" I asked.

"She's able to come back April 1st, assuming she passes her physical and psych eval, which I expect she will."

Six weeks following severe trauma and major surgery wasn't out of line, given the strenuous nature of surgery and the need to stand for long periods of time.

"I hear you received some pushback from Psych about allowing an outside psychologist to clear me," I said.

"Cutter didn't trust Psych to give you a fair shake, given the animosity between you and them. Lawson would have used your 'cool as a cucumber' nature against you, insisting you were lying to them. Cutter, Getty, Strong, Ghost, Nielson, and I all know you to be unflappable. Shelly told me how you handled what happened with your wife.

"I've only ever known one other person who was as cool a customer as you, and that was an Attending in the ED at USC Medical Center during my Sub-I. He was a combat trauma surgeon in Vietnam. Word has it, the ramshackle building where he was performing surgery was hit by mortar shells -- he didn't even blink and continued operating."

"Nurse Kellie Martin," I said. "When we lost an engine on the helicopter returning from OSU, I think her heart rate *dropped* while mine went through the roof."

"I'd have had what the nurses call 'code brown' at that point!" Doctor Roth declared. "So you did better than I would have!"

"When Kellie asked me how I was doing after the emergency landing, I said I'd managed not to soil my underwear, so I saw that as a plus. OK to change subjects?"

"Yes."

"Pascha, that is, Orthodox Easter, is the week following Western Easter. I'd like to take Great and Holy Friday as a day off so I can attend services."

"Comparable to Good Friday in the Catholic Church?"

"Yes, though we don't abbreviate the services, and they basically run all day."

"As a seriously lapsed Catholic who only goes occasionally to keep my wife happy, I am glad for the abbreviated services! I spoke to Ghost about the Orthodox services. No wonder you can stand for hours and not even notice! Anyway, you're entitled to religious accommodation, and Shelly should be back then. Are you going to play golf with us this year?"

"During the weeks I'm on a surgical team, yes. The other weeks, I obviously have to cover the ED."

"Good. Anything else?"

"No. Do you have anything else for me?"

"No. Just keep doing outstanding work."

"I will."

We shook hands, and I returned to the lounge. I had two consults, neither of which required emergency surgery, and at 5:00pm, I headed home.



## March 1, 1990, McKinley, Ohio

On Thursday morning, after rounds and overseeing my students prep patients, I went to see Cathy and Shelly.

"How are you feeling?" I asked Cathy.

"Like one of those girls in slasher movies! You know, where the masked guy with a knife comes after the cute girl, usually either while she's having sex or just after?"

I chuckled, "I'll let Doctor Edmonds know you think he's Freddy or Jason!"

"Hey, it's true, right? A masked man with a knife did this to me!"

"Technically. Context is key!"

I checked her chart, then the Foley bag.

"Urine output looks good," I said.

"If I never see a dialysis machine again, it'll be too soon! My nephrologist said that transplanted healthy kidneys don't develop cysts. And the warden said I'll be able to go home on Monday!"

"I've been inside a prison; trust me, this is NOT anything like that!"

"As a doctor, right?"

"Primarily as a lay chaplain. Sorry, I can't hang out longer. I'll stop in and see you tomorrow."

"Anytime you want."

I smiled and stepped over to Shelly's bed.

"Roth said they decided to kick you out today," I observed. "Something about being a pain in the ass to the staff?"

Shelly laughed, "The stupid TV remote broke, and it took almost twenty-four hours for maintenance to bring a new one. I mean, seriously? What's up with that?"

"It ain't the Hilton, that's for sure! Let me guess, you pressed the call button every time you needed the channel changed?"

"Or the volume changed, or it had to be turned on or off!"

"They should have stuck one of the candy strippers in here with you."

"They're having trouble recruiting since Hayes County High dropped the community service requirement for graduation."

"A foolish change. Yes, I know they're focusing more on academics, but dropping some vocational courses and things like community service requirements was a really bad decision. While I don't object to standardized tests, tying funding to test scores, as some have suggested, is likely to lead to further disparagement of graduating well-rounded citizens."

"You know the argument -- higher education is the path to upward economic mobility."



"Pardon me while I laugh at the fact that a friend of mine became an apprentice electrician three years ago, was paid during his apprenticeship, and now, as a journeyman, makes more than I do and will for at least the next four years. Not to mention overtime, collective bargaining, and a job he can go home from each day without any concerns! And compare that to my friends who are teachers who make less than he does, and probably will forever. The disparagement of trades and of manual labor is a terrible opinion and a worse policy."

"Athletes and rock or pop stars are overpaid; teachers and doctors are underpaid," Shelly observed.

"I understand your point, but if Major League Baseball generates billions in revenues, the players should share in that. The problem is not the athletes or musicians, but that the public is willing to fund those sports at those levels. Of course, because so much of it is advertising revenue, the costs are spread out in a way that people don't notice, unlike their property tax bill or income tax return!"

"Raise their taxes!" Shelly declared.

"The problem is, as Willy Sutton remarked about banks, the middle class is where the money is. That said, we shouldn't subsidize sports stadiums for billionaire NFL owners!"

"Amen to that!"

"Changing back to a more important subject, when is your psych eval?"

"Tuesday. Once they clear me, then it's a physical, and I can come back as of April 1st."

"That's what Owen projected your return date to be. Any chance it could be sooner?"

"Hospital policy is six weeks after major surgery. Something about liability insurance."

"Every single day I hate insurance companies more and more. Ditto with Medicare and Medicaid refusing to pay for tests and treatment that doctors think is appropriate."

"You're preaching to the choir! How is Loretta?"

"Unhappy, but she has a bit more feeling in her legs. Yesterday, she had a positive Babinski rather than an indifferent one. I'm no expert, obviously, but she's showing improvement each day. You should stop in and see her once they kick you."

"That's my plan," Shelly confirmed. "You up for lunch once a week in March?"

"Of course."

"Cool. How about Thursdays?"

"Works for me," I agreed.

I squeezed her hand in lieu of a hug, then headed back to the surgical ward.



## March 2, 1990, McKinley, Ohio

"If you're OK with it, Kris, Rachel, and I will come visit you after Liturgy on Sundays," I said to Loretta on Friday morning.

"I'd like that."

"How are you feeling today?"

Loretta smirked, "OK to be gross?"

"I'm a doctor! How gross could it be?"

"Guess where I itch?" she smirked.

I laughed then said, "Sorry, I shouldn't laugh, but if you have feeling *there*, that's a VERY good sign."

"TELL me about it! Lift the sheet and uncover my feet."

I laughed hard, "OK to be a smart ass?"

"What did I just walk into?"

"In the Bible, Naomi tells Ruth to uncover Boaz's feet, then lie down next to him and do what he tells her. Seems innocent enough until you understand that urine was referred to 'the water of one's feet'. She was, euphemistically saying, 'expose his genitals and have sex with him'."

"That was NOT an invitation to sex, you goofball!"

"I know that! I said I was going to be a smart ass!"

"Just uncover my feet!"

I did as she asked and saw her wiggle her left big toe.

"Wow!" I exclaimed. "That's huge! You're going to walk, Lor!"

"You do know what rehab is like, right?"

"I've heard the horror stories, but seriously, if it's that or a wheelchair..."

"Oh, I agree; I just don't want to be tortured for months on end!"

"How long at the facility?" I asked.

"At least a month, then it's week to week. Shelly stopped in to see me yesterday after they kicked her."

"She was as annoyed as every other patient who is required to leave by wheelchair. They got her to the door, she stood up, turned, and came back into the hospital and walked up to see you."

"She told me, and you know it's about liability."

"Insurance companies are the bane of our existence, though I'm not sure the government running things is any better after seeing Medicare and Medicaid! Sorry for the rant!"

"Right there with you! Changing topics, Bobby asked me to remind you that you're expected at the firehouse for dinner at some point. He doesn't see you now that you're in the surgical ward."

"As soon as we have our trauma surgery PGY1, I'll be in the ED for three months to train her on procedures, then alternate weeks. That's the new thinking on the training. But as with everything having to do with my program, always subject to change. I'll give Bobby a call."

"Did you hear they charged the girl's father with murder?" Doctor Gibbs asked.

"Yes. And that seems right to me, given he started the confrontation and brandished his pistol. Charging her lover with murder for killing her seems right, too, given she was effectively an innocent bystander. Her brother was charged with attempted murder for firing on her lover, though he missed all eight shots."

"It had to be the guy with Special Forces training who was at the hospital," Doctor Gibbs said ruefully. "But at least he won't be a burden on the taxpayers."

"I detest violence, but in this case, I'm grateful that Kleist and Turner were both crack shots and ended things before it got worse. Did you hear that the County Board voted a full scholarship for Deputy Sommers' son to go to any State school?"

"Small consolation for losing your mom at age five."

"Agreed. Rachel didn't have to suffer through the loss of her mom, which made it easier for her. Well, besides having to put up with a clueless dad."

Doctor Gibbs laughed, "I have news for you - she's going to think you're clueless for about six years starting in about nine years!"

"I think I can wait!" I chuckled. "I need to get back. Call so I can come see you on Sunday."

"I will. And thanks, Mike, for everything."

I smiled, kissed her forehead, and left the CCU to head back to the surgical ward. When I had my next break, I went to say 'goodbye' to Cathy who was being released. She flirted lightly, as was her usual practice, and I played along, though always careful to make it clear I was teasing. When I left her room, I returned to the surgical ward.



## **March 3, 1990, McKinley, Ohio**

"Why?" Rachel protested when I tried to put on her earmuffs in the music room at Taft on Saturday morning.

"Because the band is loud when we practice! If you want to listen, you have to wear your earmuffs. Or you can sit in the hallway."

"NO!" Rachel protested.

"Having fun, Mike?" Kari asked with a smirk.

"Petulance and toddlers go hand-in-hand," I chuckled. "Rachel, you need to wear your earmuffs or sit in the hall."

"NO!"

"Yes," I said firmly. "I told you that before we left home when you asked to come with me."

"DON'T WANT TO!"

I picked her up, grabbed a small chair, and walked into the corridor, setting the chair so Rachel could see the band, and I could see her, and put her in the chair. She immediately scrambled out of it, and I grabbed her and put her back. It was the ultimate test of wills, and I couldn't let my daughter win, or she'd think she could defy me simply by being, well, defiant. It took three rounds before she glared at me and crossed her arms but didn't move from the chair.

"You are SO dead," Sierra said with a smile. "Want me to watch her?"

"I'd appreciate it. She can only come into the music room if she puts on her earmuffs. She refuses to wear them."

"She's being a toddler!"

"Yep! Rachel, you stay with Sierra, please."

She glared at me but didn't refuse, so I went back into the music room, picked up my guitar, and looked to Kim.

"Let's start with *I Melt For You*," she suggested.

Two hours later, we completed our practice.

"Every Saturday now, right?" Kim asked.

"With the exception of your Easter weekend and the following one."

"OK. That gives us nine more practices, I believe. I think that should be enough for the Proms. You could do an evening or two if necessary, right?"

"Yes. Wednesdays are out, but other nights are OK. Also, remember Kris is due around the third week in June."

"Even if she's late, that shouldn't interfere with the Fourth of July."

"It won't. If she hasn't delivered by the last day of June, they'll perform a C-section."

"Where is Kris?"

"She's putting the finishing touches on a paper that's due on Monday. She'll be here next week."

I grabbed my things, then bundled an unhappy Rachel in her spring coat, and she, Kari, and I left the building together.

"How are you doing?" I asked.

"Good," Kari replied. "I started dating an attorney in the Public Defender's office. He graduated law school last year."

"I'm glad to hear that. You should have him come to band practice so we can meet him."

"Yes, Dad!" Kari said with a soft laugh. "He was busy preparing a brief this weekend and needed the time. He's helping defend one of the shooters from the domestic violence incident that ended at the hospital. Are you going to have to testify?"

"I don't think so," I replied. "I didn't actually see anything."

"José said you were in the room where the deputy was killed."



"I was, but from where I was, I could only see her, not out into the corridor. All they could ask would be medical questions, and Doctor McKnight could answer those. My chart notes would suffice for any treatment, but honestly, Deputy Sommers was dead before she hit the floor with a round through her temple. And even so, none of that would matter for the others who were charged because all that happened on their adjacent properties, not at the hospital."

"Sorry, I changed from asking about testimony to being concerned about you but didn't indicate the context switch!"

I laughed, "Why does that sound like a computer term?"

"Because it is! You're doing OK, right?"

"Yes. I met with a psychologist who cleared me to return to work right away. I only missed one full day."

We reached our cars, and once I had Rachel buckled into her car seat, Kari and I exchanged a quick, chaste hug. She and I got into our respective cars, and Rachel and I headed to McKinley Music and Movies.

"Morning, Mike!" Johnny called out when we walked in.

"Morning! Anything new and interesting?"

"*Highwayman 2* and *Vigil in a Wilderness of Mirrors* by Fish."

"I'm not a huge fan of country, but it's hard to pass up an album by Johnny Cash, Waylon Jennings, Willie Nelson, and Kris Kristofferson! I actually don't have the first one, so if you'll get me both of those and the Fish album, I'm good."

"CDs, right?"

"Yes."

"Were you at the hospital when that stuff went down last week?" he asked as he retrieved the three discs for me.

"Yes, but thankfully, Deputy Turner and Detective Kleist ended it before I was in any real danger."

"And how is the little one?"

"Rachel, tell Johnny how you are, please."

"Not happy!" she declared.

"We had a bit of a standoff," I said to Johnny. "I wanted her to wear ear protection while the band practiced, and she exercised her right as a toddler to object."

Johnny laughed, "I have two boys, seven and four, so you don't have to tell me!"

He rang up the purchase, and I paid him.

"See you in a few weeks," I said. "Rachel, say 'bye', please."

"NO!"

"Be polite, young lady," I instructed.

"NO!"

"Good luck," Johnny said with a grin.

"Thanks. I think I'm going to need it!"



## March 3, 1990, Cincinnati, Ohio

"May I hold Rachel?" Angie asked when Kris, Rachel, and I arrived at the Stephens' house on Saturday evening.

"You can try," I said. "She's in a mood."

"Rachel, come to Angie?" she asked.

Rachel smiled, walked over, and reached her arms up to be picked up. Angie picked up Rachel and I thought I saw a smirk on Rachel's face.

"She's such an angel," Angie observed. "What mood?"

"She's had an attitude all day today," I chuckled. "And she's showing it by being nice to you when she was unhappy with me all day! I don't get it because she usually likes 'papa time'."

"She's two, right?" Mrs. Stephens asked.

"Yes. She'll be three at the end of August."

"It's the age where they discover a level of independence, and they let you know about it! Do you have a moment to speak privately?"

"Kris?" I asked my wife, indicating I wanted her permission.

"Yes, of course," Kris replied. "I'll stay with Angie and Rachel."

Mrs. Stephens and I stepped into the kitchen.

"Angie asked about seeing Doctor Mercer again. I'm not sure that's a good idea."

"Me, either. Did Angie give a reason?"

"She doesn't like the behavioral counselor she's been seeing, and the psychiatrist suggested we find one Angie likes and can relate to. She always liked Doctor Mercer and Doctor Mercer helped at the hearing."

"Have you spoken to Doctor Mercer?"

"No. I wanted your opinion first."

"Does Angie know that?"

"No. I said I wanted to confer with the attorney Laura Bragg hired to help us. What do you think?"

"I think I'd like to speak to Doctor Mercer. I spoke to her on Wednesday, and I need to ask her a very specific question."

"Would you mind sharing?"

"Just to confirm something we discussed -- holistic treatment."

"I'm sorry, I don't know that term."

"It means, to put it simply, treating body, mind, and soul. Medicine gives the soul short shrift, even in hospitals run by religious organizations. In my mind,

true healing only occurs when all aspects of a patient's being are taken into account."

"Wasn't that happening with Father Stephen?"

"The problem was, as I see it, that he and Doctor Mercer didn't discuss Angie's spiritual health. He, in obedience to Bishop JOHN, reported relevant details to Doctor Mercer, but they didn't discuss Angie in a way that I believe would have helped. For Angie, as for me, receiving the Eucharist is a necessary part of healing our bodies, minds, and souls."

"So what is it you need to ask?"

"If Doctor Mercer will treat Angie in the way I think will be most beneficial. If not, then we need to find another counselor. I think she will. She actually asked about Angie when we spoke on Wednesday, and I promised to let her know how Angie was doing. On that, Angie seems a bit more alert."

"She has good days and bad days. Doctor Hoffman has reduced the dosages to the minimum that keeps Angie on an even keel about ninety percent of the time. She's working again, but only half days. More than that, and she becomes erratic. Aikido helps, as does going to church."

"Any medical problems?"

"No. She had a complete set of lab tests, and her liver and kidney function is good, something that her doctor said they have to watch closely."

I nodded, "Long-term use of any drug can impair liver and kidney function. How's her diet?"

"Good. No processed foods, limited sugar, limited salt, and limited complex carbohydrates. Fruit, vegetables, chicken, fish, and shellfish, along with nuts as snacks."

"Not all that different from my diet," I replied. "Though I eat too many French fries."

"I think we ALL do!" Mrs. Stephens said with a smile.

"And her sleeping habits?"

"The mild sedative she takes keeps her calm and helps her sleep."

"Is Angie's friend Anna still in Chicago?"

"Yes. She's still working For Allstate at their headquarters in the Chicago suburbs. She married Gerryd, has a son who is eighteen months, and is about three months pregnant. Unfortunately, she hasn't come to visit in over a year. Angie spends quite a bit of time with the women from church, both her age and the older ladies."

"Good. I'll call Doctor Mercer on Monday and then call you."

"I know it might be asking a lot, but could you see Angie more often? She was so happy today."

"My schedule has changed and would probably allow that. Let me speak to Kris, but I think we can do that."

"Good."

"Code Blue is playing at the Goshen Prom on May 11th."

"Linda Kane let me know. Angie is looking forward to it."

"Great! Shall we go rescue Angie from my daughter?"

"That adorable little angel?" Mrs. Stephens asked mirthfully.

"That's how they trap you!" I chuckled. "Then they turn into toddlers! And later, into teenagers!"

We both laughed, then returned to the living room where Angie, Kris, Rachel, and Mr. Stephens were sitting.



## **March 3, 1990, McKinley, Ohio**

After dinner at Angie's house, Kris, Rachel, and I drove home, where I read to Rachel, and we said our evening prayers. Once Rachel was in bed, Kris and I relaxed in the great room with tea.

"Is it OK to ask what you and Mrs. Stephens spoke about?" Kris inquired.

"Of course! Even without our 'no secrets' rule, I'd tell you. Angie asked about seeing Fran Mercer and Mrs. Stephens asked for my thoughts on that."

"Please don't take this the wrong way, but is Angie aware that Doctor Mercer agreed with the treatment by the psychiatrist who had his license suspended?"

"No, I don't believe so, as there was no need to tell Angie. Part of it is that I'm not sure Angie could comprehend the nuances of being required to report what

Angie had told Father Stephen and where responsibility for the choice of treatment actually lay.

"Remember, too, that Fran's reaction was as much about me as it was about Angie. She felt I was ignoring the standard of care because I was too close to the matter, which is the exact reason ethical physicians do not treat loved ones or family members, except *in extremis*. It's far too easy for judgment to be clouded, even if you recognize the possibility."

"We didn't discuss it, but how do you reconcile that with the situation with Elizaveta's grandfather?"

"The problem nearly always lies in the opposite direction -- making an extraordinary effort or taking significant risks to achieve an unlikely outcome. In this case, it was obvious that Nikolay Vladimirovich was not going to survive, or if he did, he would be on a ventilator in a hospital bed until he had another significant coronary event. His request for me to call Father Nicholas was made because he knew he was dying.

"Once his heart stopped, I felt resuscitation efforts would be futile. I had spoken with him quite a bit over the time Elizaveta and I were courting or married and knew the last thing he wanted was 'heroic measures', as they're called. I considered that knowledge to be the equivalent of a living will, and Viktor and Doctor Gibbs concurred with that decision."

"That's your fear as well."

I nodded, "That's why we had Stefan draw up the living wills."

"What did you say to Mrs. Stephens about Doctor Mercer?"



"That I'd speak to Fran on Monday. I actually have an idea that I think will help, assuming Fran is willing."

"What's that?"

"In cases where cross-discipline expertise is needed, the hospital will convene a working group of physicians, nurses, and other professionals who meet regularly to discuss the patient's care. That's especially true for difficult or complicated cases, or cases where there is no known cure."

"Like with schizophrenia, right?"

"Yes. I think the best approach would be to have Father Stephen, Fran, Angie's GP, her gynecologist, and her Aikido instructor meet regularly, perhaps by conference call, to discuss her treatment. We know that Angie does better when she attends church and practices martial arts and that her diet directly affects her moods and her emotional stability. All of those people have to work together to get it right."

"You didn't mention her psychiatrist."

"Sorry, yes, obviously Doctor Hoffman would be involved and would probably be the one to lead the group. But I think it has to start with Fran because everything I've read says that behavioral psychology shows better results than any other possible treatment. Remember, I have but one goal here."

"To keep Angie from being sent to an inpatient facility."

"Exactly. She's living a productive life that is fulfilling, at least so far as it can be. That should be our goal for any patient we treat. That said, there is no possible way Angie can ever achieve the things she wanted most in life -- a husband and

children. Greenberg threw all of that out the window when he committed malpractice."

"May I ask how much money was provided?"

"Stefan negotiated an annuity that will provide \$36,000 per year for life for Angie, though it's set up so that the money goes to whoever is her primary caregiver. That's her mom, and it will be so long as her mom is capable of caring for her."

"What happens after that?"

"It gets tricky, but Stefan set things up such that Lara and I are 'next friends' and we'd have significant input into her care, with Lara directing the financial side. The State would have to decide who would have custody. If something happened soon, God forbid, her brother would have custody, and more than likely, Angie would live in a Roman Catholic group home, though there is a chance she might be able to live with one of the women from Saint George, Loveland."

"Angie's parents are in their fifties, right?"

"Her dad is fifty-two and her mom is forty-nine. I hope that means at least twenty years where Mrs. Stephens can reasonably care for Angie. We'll worry about what happens after that, after that. Mrs. Stephens did ask if we could see Angie more often, and I said I'd discuss it with you."

"Rachel certainly loves her!"

"Rachel was being a...toddler!"

Kris laughed, "I was so surprised to see YOU on the receiving end! She usually worships the ground on which you walk!"

"Hold that thought for when she's a teenager," I chuckled. "I saw how things were with Liz, Tasha, Emmy, Lara, Elizaveta, and others. Conflict is normal. That's true even for your sister, though to a lesser extent than most. The Tsarina is asserting her newly discovered independence. It's right about this age when they figure out that they can flat-out refuse to do something, and adults are, generally speaking, helpless to force them."

"I bet when 'Mama' has a new baby to care for, 'Papa' will walk on water once again!"

"We'll see!" I said. "Ready for bed?"

"With you? Always!"

I took our empty mugs to the kitchen, and then Kris and I went up to bed.



## **March 4, 1990, Columbus, Ohio**

"Hi, Loretta," I said when Kris, Rachel, and I entered her room at the rehab center on Sunday after church.

"Hi, Mike!"

Bobby and Bobby Junior were there as well, and I greeted them.

"How are you doing?" I asked Doctor Gibbs.

"They ran every test they could think of on Friday, and my physical torture begins tomorrow morning."

"Therapy, Doctor," I corrected. "What did the tests show?"

"I had a contrast CAT scan, and the neurologist said the results looked 'promising'. I can wiggle both big toes."

"That's excellent news."

"What happened?" Rachel asked.

"I was hurt at the hospital," Doctor Gibbs said. "My legs don't work right, and they're going to fix them."

"Papa can fix them!" Rachel declared.

"*Back to walking on water again,*" Kris said quietly.

"Papa isn't that kind of doctor," I countered. "Papa's job is to save lives. Other doctors fix this kind of problem."

"Why?" Rachel asked.

"Because a doctor needs special training to fix legs; my special training is to save people who are in accidents or who have a heart attack or things like that."

"Why?"

"Because there's just too much for any single person to know!"

"Papa knows everything!" Rachel declared.

"Do you know the difference between God and a surgeon?" Bobby asked me with a grin.

I chuckled, "I've heard that one once or twice! But I'm not the one making the claim! And I'm smart enough not to run into burning buildings!"

"Don't look at me!" Bobby declared. "I'm right with you on that one! You know paramedics rarely do that. And speaking of running into burning buildings, you haven't come to the house for dinner. We still owe you for the LT."

"LT?" Kris asked.

"Short for 'lieutenant'," Bobby said. "In this case, it's Jim Greer."

"Pick a night except Wednesday or Saturday," I said.

"A week from Tuesday," Bobby suggested. "We'll get the entire company to the house, plus the captain. It'll be crowded, but we can pull the engines out of the bay and set up tables. We've done it before. What time does your shift end?"

"5:00pm."

"Then let's call it 6:30pm in case you get shanghaied into a trauma."

"Sounds good."

We spent about thirty minutes visiting, then Kris, Rachel, and I headed home for a meal with Elias, Serafina, Subdeacon Mark, and Alyssa.



# V. Because I Love You

**March 5, 1990, McKinley, Ohio**

"I'm honestly surprised," Fran Mercer said on Monday evening after I explained why I had called her.

"If you're surprised, then I'm concerned," I replied.

"Why?"

"Because it tells me you still have a misconception about my views on what happened."

"Given how often you read me off, don't you think I have reason to be at least mildly surprised that you'd consider it?"

"I suppose that's reasonable, though you should also consider what drives my actions."

"Angie's wellbeing is primary over just about everything except your family."

"And because she asked, what was my only possible course of action?"

"Oh, stop!" Fran said, laughing. "You're using the rhetorical tricks your mom used on you!"

"Guilty as charged. I only have one question for you, Fran. Can you commit unequivocally to treating Angie holistically? That is body, mind, and soul? And spare me the reflexive 'ethical concerns'."

"You do acknowledge that they are real, right?"

"If you were trying to convert her or convince her to give up her faith, I'd have you before the licensing review board so fast your head would spin. But that is not what I'm talking about, and you know it! You and I talked about these issues years ago, and you seemed willing to discuss them with me."

"You weren't a patient, Mike. Even if we called a few of those sessions 'counseling', it was more akin to coaching than what the practitioners would call behavioral counseling. Everything I did with you could be done by a layman, except that first evaluation."

"Fair enough," I replied. "But given how integral Angie's faith is to her wellbeing, it can't be ignored or even minimized. I have a thought of how we might proceed."

"What's that?"

"In the same way the hospital uses cross-discipline teams to treat patients with complex or unknown maladies, we should do that with Angie. A monthly meeting, which could be by conference call for convenience, with you, Father Stephen, Angie's GP, her Aikido instructor, and, if appropriate, Leslie Hoffman. You all discuss Angie's case, share what you know, and agree on a unified treatment plan that minimizes the use of pharmaceuticals."

"I'm sure you're aware that Doctor Hoffman has an approach closer to yours," Fran said.

"Yes. It's one of the reasons Marjorie and Ken named her in the petition to move Angie away from the now-disgraced Doctor Greenberg. What do you think of the idea?"



"I think it's a good one, though I'm not sure how easy it will be to coordinate everyone."

"I'll speak to everyone and get them on board, then turn it over to you. I need to stay away from that group so I can be Angie's friend; I'm absolutely not her doctor."

"But are you going to second guess us at every turn?"

"No. That was the point of what I just said. The only person with whom I'll communicate about Angie regularly is Marjorie Stephens. Well, and Angie, of course. So long as Marjorie is happy, I'll be happy."

"Can you really stay hands-off?"

"Can you really treat Angie holistically?"

"One of those is more difficult than the other," Fran said.

"I know. You have the much harder challenge!"

Fran laughed, "You know that's not what I meant!"

"Yes, but I actually meant what I said. Given our disagreements in the past, it's a reasonable question and a legitimate concern. Remember, I am not proposing any specific course of treatment, only that the treatment deals with Angie as a complete person -- body, mind, and soul. It's only in that synergy that we are who we are -- our authentic selves."

"And you think all the others will buy in?"

"I do. Father Stephen and Angie's Aikido instructor will agree immediately. I can't imagine any GP worth his salt who wouldn't agree simply based on continuity of care. My interactions with Leslie Hoffman tell me she'll agree. That leaves you. Are you going to reject Angie's plea for help based on a flawed view of humanity?"

"More 'black or white' thinking?"

"No," I countered. "Infinite shades of grey. It's you who are engaging in 'black or white' thinking when it comes to dealing with matters of faith. You know what the literature says about regular church attendance and schizophrenia, even if it's anecdotal. Anecdotal, it may be, but it helps Angie. So, please tell me a better plan for *this* patient."

"You are, as you promised you would be, a forceful advocate for your patients or, in this case, your friend."

"Does that mean you accept?" I asked.

"On a trial basis, yes, assuming the others agree."

"I'll accept that, given we're attempting something different. I'll get in touch with Father Stephen and contact Angie's Aikido instructor. Once they're on board, I'll speak to her GP and Leslie Hoffman."

"Do your supervising physicians find you as difficult as I do?"

"More, I suspect," I chuckled. "You don't have to deal with me twelve to fifteen hours a day, five or six days a week!"

"You take perverse pleasure in being a pain in the butt, don't you?"

"I may take pleasure in the fact that Doctor Gibbs regularly calls me a pain in the ass and, in fact, upgraded me to 'royal pain in the ass' back in November."

"How are your reviews?"

"All good, though I have been spoken to about being confrontational."

"Shocking," Fran said lightly. "I'll let you go. Get in touch when you've spoken to the others."

"I will."

We said 'goodbye', I hung up, then returned to the great room to spend time with Kris and Rachel before bed. A short time later, we said our family prayers, and I put Rachel to bed.

"How did it go with Doctor Mercer?" Kris asked when I joined her on the couch after Rachel's bedtime routine.

"She's willing to give it a try, which is probably the most I can expect at this point. I have to be very careful not to try to treat Angie but simply manage the process. It's a fine line, but I think I can walk it."

"Is there any chance at all that Angie will recover?"

"There have been sporadic reports of what I would call long-term remission for women in their forties or fifties, but that's almost always those with late-onset. As far as I'm aware, there are no verifiable reports of women who exhibit symptoms as teenagers entering long-term remission. Of course, I'm not an expert, and I don't read the literature because I simply don't have the time. To be honest, I also don't have the training or experience to understand the literature. I'd be in the same boat with an oncology journal."

"I always had this conception of doctors as knowing more than they actually do."

"Me, too. I struggled with the concept, but now, five years after my first Preceptorship rotation, I understand what they were trying to tell me. But enough about medicine! What can I do for you?"

"Put on some soft music and cuddle before bed."

"That I can absolutely do!"



## **March 6, 1990, McKinley, Ohio**

"How did things go with your call with Doctor Mercer?" Clarissa asked at lunch on Tuesday.

"OK. It took some arm twisting, but I think things will work out. This morning, I called both Father Stephen and Jonas Blane, Angie's Aikido instructor, and both agreed to participate in what I'm calling Angie's treatment team meetings. Marjorie is contacting Angie's GP. Once he agrees, then I'll speak to Leslie Hoffman. I'll work through Marjorie Stephens to ensure they're making progress, and consult with Father Stephen if they seem to be veering off course."

"Creating the 'wall of separation' you need so it doesn't appear you're treating her."

"Exactly. I'm acting as her friend, doing my best to ensure her medical team works with her spiritual advisor and her physical trainer, though Aikido has a spiritual component, similar to Shōtōkan karate."

"You're doing a good thing, Petrovich. I know how much you love her and how upset you were at what happened."

"If I believed in specific answered prayer, the one prayer I would make would be for Angie to recover enough to live a normal life, even if she was never able to marry and have kids."

"I'm going to ask this as only Lissa could -- not for Elizaveta not to die?"

"I'm talking here and now, Lissa. I didn't ask for Angie to never have been afflicted with schizophrenia. I mean, at that point, the entire universe is upended. Maybe the multiverse does exist, and there are realities where Angie is healthy, and Elizaveta doesn't die, but if those things changed, what else would change? And would I *ever* ask for anything that took Rachel from me?"

"Never, despite her being in full toddler mode!"

I couldn't help but laugh, "Alternating between 'Love Papa!' and 'No!' from minute to minute!"

"The first said in French, of course, thanks to your sister-in-law!"

"Yeah, yeah," I chuckled. "She has a boyfriend now, so she's torturing HIM instead, I'm sure!"

"And yet, she's still teaching Rachel to speak French!"

"She has less time, so that's a good thing!" I grinned. "How is the ED?"

"Non-stop excitement! Exactly what I *didn't* sign up for! I don't know how you adrenaline junkies do it!"

"Always looking for the next hit to maintain the high!" I chuckled.

"I will be SO happy when June 1st rolls around! You can have it! I'll go back to actually spending time with patients and having more than a few seconds to think. You were made for emergency medicine; I wasn't."

"Just hang in there, Lissa. There's a light at the end of the tunnel."

"And I swear it's an oncoming train!"

We finished our lunch and Clarissa returned to the ED while I went upstairs to supervise my students prepping the afternoon surgical case. I had just completed that when I was paged by the duty nurse for an ER consult. As was the usual practice, I left Erin to escort the patient to the OR while Todd accompanied me to the ED. We took the stairs, and walked down the corridor and into Trauma 1.

"Hi, Ghost. What do you have?"

"MVA with major chest involvement; classic flail chest with multiple internal injuries. He needs a central line and a chest tube."

"Cutdown tray to me!" I ordered.

Kellie brought me the tray and assisted me while I put in the central line and chest tube.

"500cc in the Thora-Seal," I observed. "He's going to need surgery. Todd, call upstairs and let them know we need a chest cutter in about ten minutes."

Ghost ordered two units on the rapid infuser, and a minute later, the patient's blood pressure improved. Once he was stabilized, Naveen Varma, Todd, Ghost's student Janelle, and I escorted the patient up to OR 3.

"Scrub in, Mike!" Nelson Burke instructed. "Your students, too. How bad?"

"MVA; flail chest; 800ccs total in the Thora-Seal; BP is 90/60; tachy at 110; right tib-fib compression fracture; assorted lacerations and contusions."

"Stood on the brakes?"

"That would be my guess."

We all moved to the scrub room to prepare for surgery.

"You'll be the second surgeon," Doctor Burke said. "Blake will be about thirty minutes, and this guy can't wait. Can I count on you to ligate or Bovie?"

"I've only used the electrocautery device once, but I can use it under your direction. I haven't ligated during surgery, but I have practiced; again, I can do it under your direction."

"OK. For the Bovie, I'll point, you shoot. For ligation, I'll give express instructions. Your students will hold retractors, and Abby will suction."

We were, at best, a makeshift surgical team, but with Shelly missing and three other procedures underway, there wasn't much choice. Shelly would return in just over three weeks, and in two months, we'd have our new complement of Residents. That would help a bit, but it wouldn't be until we moved to the new surgical wing in three years that we'd be able to handle six simultaneous procedures. We were already delaying non-emergency surgeries, and the problem would get worse before it got better.

Fortunately, while the patient was badly injured, he wasn't bleeding out quickly, which allowed Nelson to provide specific directions and advice as I completed

the tasks as he directed. The surgery went well, the internal bleeding was stopped, and when it was done, my students and I escorted the patient to recovery. I checked his vitals, then left Erin to sit with him and went to the lounge to speak to Nelson.

"Appraisal?" I asked.

"You know your knots, but you need serious practice with the Bovie. It'll come, but if we'd needed to move fast, neither skill is up to snuff. That's not a criticism, mind you, simply an acknowledgment that you're a PGY1, and those are PGY3 skills. You're skilled with the scalpel to the point where Dennis Nagle noted that you were the most skilled he'd seen in his twelve years teaching anatomy and recommended you be a surgeon."

"I wasn't aware."

"You had your mind made up. I know Owen spoke to you and tried to bring you to the Dark Side. We're very happy you found a way to split the difference and pushed us to do something we probably would have delayed doing for several years. And then the events of a few weeks ago forced us to accelerate your training. It's working because you understand your limitations. That's important as you move forward, too. Each success will make you more confident, and that's what leads to overconfidence."

"Shelly and Loretta have made that point, as has Carl Strong. And, of course, Clarissa Saunders never misses a chance to knock me down a peg or two!"

"All of us have that friend who does their best to try to keep us grounded. That's especially important for surgeons."

"What?!" I faux-whined with a smirk. "We're not gods? They told me I'd be a god!"



Doctor Burke laughed, "That is our reputation. The important thing is not to let that convince you that you can do more than you're ready to do. I believe John spoke to you in detail about that following the crike."

I nodded, "He did."

"With Shelly and Loretta laid up, who are you talking to?"

"Doctor Saunders and Ghost, along with a clinical psychologist I've worked with for years. And my wife, of course."

"That's the outside psychologist Owen referred you to for your psych eval following the incident?"

"Yes. I first met her about eight years ago as a Freshman, and we've had a few ups and downs. Coming back to Shelly and Loretta, I actually spoke to them almost every day. I'm having lunch with Shelly on Thursdays this month, and I visit Loretta on Sundays at the rehab center in Columbus."

"OK. Keep doing that, and keep up the good work, Mike. Just remember you still have a lot to learn."

"Thank you, and I will remember."

I left his office and went to check on the patient in recovery, then went to the lounge to wait for my next consult.



## March 8, 1990, McKinley, Ohio

"What did Psych have to say?" I asked Shelly when we met on Thursday at a new diner which had opened across the street from the hospital.

"The usual BS. They cleared me but felt I was pretending to be OK."

"That was my concern if they were to have evaluated me, especially given my history with them. I'm actually not surprised, given you supported me against Lawson."

"They tried to ask about you, but I refused to comment at all and directed them to Doctor Cutter."

"That also doesn't surprise me," I said. "They have it in for surgery and the ED, and me specifically."

"You know Lawson is a wannabe surgeon who couldn't Match, but I found more -- his girlfriend at the time, who was lower ranked, Matched her first choice -- surgery at UCLA. He tried to Scramble to something in LA but ended up in Grand Rapids. And as you know, they wouldn't hire him as an Attending."

"And we did?"

"Another datapoint -- his uncle was good friends with the Psych Chief at the time and pulled strings to get him hired."

"Wonderful."

"Oh, it gets better. Her uncle is Mark Edwards."

"The former Chairman of the Board of Directors of the hospital," I observed.

And Erin Edwards' dad. He was no longer Chairman, having taken a similar role at a private-sector, for-profit hospital in Columbus.

"That explains a few things," I said. "Between you and me, and not to be repeated, his daughter was relentless in trying to entice me to cheat on Elizaveta."

"How did you meet her?"

"The first time was when she was in the ED after being struck in the head by a golf club. That was in the Fall of First Year. I ran into her again when I was on my OB/GYN Preceptorship. After that, she sought me out on several occasions."

"And you honored your vows, of course, not to mention valuing your life, given what I've heard about Elizaveta."

"She was a feisty one, that's for sure. I let her know what had happened because they were classmates."

"Ever been tempted?" Shelly asked.

"Not the way you mean, but I freely acknowledge that Kellie Martin would be at the top of my list if I were single."

Shelly pouted, "Not me?"

"I want to ask *you* a question -- is that how you want me to think about you in the locker room?"

"Touché. Has Ellie Green backed off?"

"Yes. She'll hint occasionally that she's still interested, but it's tame."

"And that High School Senior who all but begged you to screw in her hospital bed?" Shelly asked with a smirk.

"You were there and saw how I handled it! And she was careful to not push things too far."

"Right, because saying surgery was the only way she'd get you inside her wasn't pushing things too far in any way!"

I chuckled, "Tone of voice. Did she mean it? Sure. Was she being obnoxious? No. She understood I was OK with a bit of teasing, but I'm positive she also knew it wasn't going to happen. If it was, the *last* thing I would have done was explain wearing my wedding ring on my *right* hand."

"True."

"How are things with your guy?"

"Moving along," Shelly replied. "I figure a Fall wedding next year, but neither of us is in a hurry. It's not like the piece of paper is a permission slip or anything!"

I chuckled, "I know a few fathers who would strongly disagree and insist that it is the *only* permission slip!"

Shelly rolled her eyes, "My dad was like that. And you know my response!"

I chuckled, "The same one quite a few young women I know chose, including my mom!"

"Who told you? Your dad?"

"No, my mom. The really funny part is she was positive her dad didn't know, but it's clear from things he's said that he was aware she was, to put it in 1950s terms, 'running around'."

"I think my dad went for the 'plausible deniability' approach."

"That sounds like the dad of a girl I dated for a few years in college. There is no way he didn't know, but he never said anything. Well, that's not quite true -- his other daughter got pregnant at sixteen, and she accused her older sister of having sex with me to try to limit the fallout. Of course, at that point, the girl and I hadn't started fooling around, so we could deny it."

"I suspect your history in High School and college would be interesting to hear!"

I chuckled, "Not High School. I didn't become a 'loose man' until after graduation!"

Shelly laughed softly, "Nice way to turn that around from the usual stupid idea that guys are studs and girls are sluts."

"You, of all people here, should know I don't go for double standards for anything."

"May I say I'll enjoy watching you about ten years from now?" Shelly asked with a sly smile.

"Miss Rachel is already asserting herself and has her biological mom's fiery personality! Not that Kris isn't equally fiery."

"Of which there is ample evidence, given she's due in three months!"

"Whatever! How are you feeling?"

"Good. I'm back to my regular exercise routine, albeit using significantly less resistance and less weight on the machines. I'm working my way back, but it'll be a few months."

"So other than about four inches of small bowel and one lobe of your liver, no internal problems?"

"None. Thank God it missed my uterus. I only want one, but I do want one."

"Fortunately, John and Owen are both enlightened enough that they won't interfere with your career beyond missing eight to twelve weeks."

"Speaking of that, how much trouble have you gotten into while I've been out?"

"I performed an appendectomy."

"As a PGY1?!" Shelly asked. "I am seriously jealous!"

"I also assisted with a trauma surgery and used the Bovie and ligated. Fortunately, the patient was stable enough for Nelson Burke to talk me through things."

"All the PGY2s and PGY3s were tied up?"

"Yes. It's been busy, and missing a qualified surgeon doesn't help."

"Not yet," she replied. "Still a PGY5."

"And yet, you're permitted to perform procedures with minimal supervision. I'm certainly not and won't be for some time. Well, except the procedures in the ED, but even those are always supervised by an Attending."

"That's more about liability than anything," Shelly said. "You're obviously qualified to perform those procedures."

"Nelson did warn me about crossing lines, the same as Owen did after the crike."

"You've exercised good judgment, which is why you're allowed to do those things. I'm positive you won't intentionally get in over your head, but I also know you'll call for help the moment you need it."

"That worked so well with OB!" I said sarcastically.

"Hey, you have the distinction of delivering a healthy baby in the ED! That's a rarity!"

"And one I'd have very much preferred to NOT have done! That said, it all turned out well, and the fact that the teenage girl's parents were supportive was a nice plus. If I never have to do that again, I'll be happy!"

"So will legal! They do not need that kind of potential liability! If *anything* had gone wrong, even if it wasn't our fault, the hospital would have been in deep sneakers!"

"True. And the same was true for the crike, though given it was a fireman, the County was on the hook either way."

"I'd have tried that as a med student if there was no other way to save his life," Shelly said. "Thankfully, I didn't have to. That said, I was first on the scene of an MVA when I was Fourth Year and provided what was euphemistically called 'First Aid' to the victims. That violated the rules, but everyone looked the other way for obvious reasons."

"Did they all make it?"

"Yes. The paramedics showed up about five minutes after I started working on the patients with a pair of First Aid kits and the minimal things I had in my medical bag. I helped them until they transported the patients. And, like you with the cruke, I reported my own behavior."

"Confession is good for the soul *and* the medical license!"

"As they say, it's much easier to ask forgiveness than permission. That's how you handled the delivery."

I nodded, "Once it was clear OB was going to blow me off, I had no choice but to order my student to commandeer the necessary equipment. Fortunately, the Attendings fought that little war."

"Territorialism is a major problem. You saw it with the battle over to whom the trauma surgeons would report."

"I prefer the red scrubs!"

"Me, too!"

"Sorry to cut this short, but I need to get back to supervising my toddlers prepping a bowel resection."

"YOU were a toddler less than a year ago!"

"I grew up! Allegedly."

"Allegedly!" Shelly confirmed with a smile.



We hugged lightly, I paid for our lunches, and then I headed across the street to the hospital. Everything went smoothly, and at 3:00pm, I walked to the medical building next door for Kris' prenatal checkup. Doctor Forsberg pronounced everything was fine and provided an ultrasound image for us. When the exam was finished, Kris headed home, and I returned to the hospital to complete my shift.



## **March 10, 1990, McKinley, Ohio**

"Are you going to wear your earmuffs?" I asked Rachel as I unbuckled her from her car seat.

She screwed up her face and glared at me, looking for all the world like Elizaveta when she had been unhappy with me.

"I don't want to!" she declared.

"But will you do it?"

She glared at me, then grudgingly said, "Yes."

"Thank you," I said.

Rachel insisted on walking, so I slung my balalaika across my back and carried my guitar case in my left hand. I held Rachel's left hand with my right, and Kris carried our sheet music as we walked into the humanities building and made our way to the music room.

"Morning, Mike!" José called out when we walked in. "Hi, Kris! Hi, Rachel!"

We all greeted him, along with the other members of the band.

"Mike," Kari said, "this is Doug Cromwell from the Hayes County Public Defender's Office; Doug, Doctor Mike Loucks, a trauma surgeon."

We shook hands and greeted each other.

"Call me Mike, please," I said. "Or, if you *have* to use my title, Doctor Mike."

"Mike it is," he said.

Practice went well, though I was out of practice playing with the group, but I was positive I'd be fine by the time we had to play the first Prom gig.

"I figure we won't try any new songs until after the Proms," Kim said as we packed up our equipment. "I figure we can use June to learn a pair of new songs for the Fourth."

"What are you thinking?" I asked.

*"Every Rose Has Its Thorn, Once Bitten, Twice Shy, Welcome to the Jungle, or Make Me Lose Control. Any preferences? You're the one who sings lead."*

"If it's up to me, then I'd choose Poison and Guns N' Roses."

"OK. We'll do those. I'll solicit input from everyone after the Fourth to expand our repertoire. We won't have time before the club gig to learn them, though, but we could for the music festival."

"How many songs are on that setlist?" Sticks asked.

"Six. Basically a thirty-minute set. Six leaves us time for an encore."

"Is there any way to find out what other groups are singing?" José asked. "It would be better not to overlap."

"I'll call Johnny and ask," I offered. "I'll also make sure we can substitute after we turn in our list so we can avoid duplication."

"Great!" Kim declared. "See you guys next weekend!"

Kris, Rachel, and I left the music room and returned to my Mustang. Once everyone was buckled in, we headed to Kroger for our weekly shopping trip. Great Lent was in full swing, but we had a seriously relaxed fasting rule, given Kris was in her sixth month. That meant fish was always allowed, and chicken occasionally, along with dairy, though we were careful what we served when our Orthodox friends joined us for meals.

"Lara doesn't follow the fast strictly, right?" Kris asked as we shopped.

"Correct. She and Nathan simply abstain from red meat, so having chicken tomorrow won't be a concern. Clarissa, Tessa, Jocelyn, and Gene will eat anything we put before them."

"Papa?" Rachel inquired from the seat in the cart.

"Yes?"

"Sketti?"

"I think we can have spaghetti tonight if Mama is OK with that."

"Yes, of course!" Kris agreed. "We can make chicken Parmesan on a bed of spaghetti noodles."

"Let's get a French loaf so I can make garlic bread as well," I suggested.

"At the bakery, not here, right?" Kris asked.

"Yes."

We bought the necessary ingredients, along with the other things on our list, then stopped at the baker for fresh bread. At home, we had lunch, and when Rachel went down for her nap, Kris and I went to lie in bed so she could nap as well. That evening, after dinner, we went to Saint Michael for Vespers, then had a quiet evening at home.



## **March 11, 1990, Columbus, Ohio**

"How are you doing, Misha?" Vladyka JOHN asked as we sat in his office at the Cathedral on Sunday following the Divine Liturgy.

"I'm OK."

"I will repeat that I thank God each day for protecting you. How are your friends?"

"Doctor Lindsay will return to work in about three weeks. Doctor Gibbs is making slow progress. We'll stop in to see her after we leave here today, but when I spoke to her on the phone on Friday, she said she has feeling in both legs and can move all her toes. That indicates she should be able to walk, though she might need leg braces or a cane. Nobody can say for sure at the moment."

"Good. And your interior life?"

"I confess every two to three weeks, receive the Eucharist every Sunday, and pray consistently."

"Have you spoken to Father Roman?"

"I did call him the day after the incident, and I'll see him the weekend of April 6th. All three of us are going to the monastery."

"And you've continued to speak to your secular counselor?"

"Yes. On that, I'm working with her complete caregiving team to coordinate her care."

"Father Stephen called to let me know. You're doing a good thing, Misha. When is your next trip to the prison?"

"Two weeks from today. Protodeacon Ivan will be there to serve the Typika, which I'm sure you know."

"You'll act as his acolyte, yes?"

"Yes."

"You have my blessing to wear your purple *sticharion*, though obviously not your *orar* or any other indicia of clerical office."

"Thank you, Vladyka. I had planned to simply wear my cassock, but I will wear the *sticharion*."

"On that matter, do you have any idea what Kris might think about our discussion a few years ago?"

"I think she would object, at least with regard to the canons. She was ROCOR, as you know."

Bishop JOHN laughed, "They do tend to insist on «akriveia» in all things! On that, Metropolitan PHILIP of the Antiochian Archdiocese granted permission for a widowed priest, Father Joseph Allen, to marry without being laicized."

"I bet that went over well."

"There was, shall we say, a small rebellion amongst some of the clergy, especially the priests in the AOEM."

The AEOM was the new name for the Evangelical Orthodox Church, which had been brought into the Antiochian Archdiocese by Metropolitan PHILIP.

"I take it that did not lead to reversing the decision."

"It did not. The reports I've received say that the laity accepted it and most supported it."

"Interesting."

"We'll discuss it again in a year or two," Vladyka JOHN said. "I did suggest to Father Nicholas that you teach Sunday School once a month, and I believe your new schedule would permit that."

"It would. I do want to say that I'm not sure Kris will see things differently, even with what you just told me about the Antiochian priest."

"Let's worry about that in the future. Will you teach Sunday School once a month?"

"Yes, Vladyka," I replied.

"Good. How is Kris doing with her pregnancy?"

"Just fine. She had her checkup on Thursday, and Doctor Forsberg was happy."

"Did you ask the sex?"

"No, but I'm reasonably certain from looking at the ultrasound image. I didn't say anything to Kris, so I shouldn't say anything to you."

The image had suggested strongly that we'd have a baby girl, but ultrasound images could be deceiving. In reading them, being certain the baby was a boy was possible, but unless the baby was in exactly the right posture, at six months, you could not say unequivocally the baby was a girl.

"Wise, Misha!" Vladyka JOHN said with a twinkle in his eye. "Have you chosen names?"

"Charlotte Michelle and John Michael," I replied.

"Will you allow me the privilege of baptizing your son or daughter?"

"Of course, Vladyka! Kris will want to stick with the usual practice of forty days, though she won't stay away from church."

"Good. I strongly discourage that practice, though I know it's important for some of the faithful. It's similar to the old taboos of receiving the Eucharist at that time of the month, something else I discourage, but there are women who abstain during that time."

"Right up there with some of the older couples covering the icons in their bedrooms when they have sex. That said, that one I could actually defend theologically."

"Go on..." Bishop JOHN said with a smile.

"Well, given the icons manifest the true presence of the saint or of Christ, it would be, in their minds, the equivalent of having sex in front of spectators. That said, that manifestation is a mystery, and in my mind, it doesn't make the icon work like a *Nineteen Eighty-Four* viewscreen. That would be the potential error in their thinking, but I don't want to go down the path of trying to explain the mysteries. That's like the edges of ancient maps having the warning, 'Here be there dragons!'"

"Quite so! The error of the Scholastics was trying to conceive that which is ineffable, inconceivable, and incomprehensible."

We prayed together, then I left his office. I found Kris and Rachel with her family, and after a brief conversation, Kris, Rachel, and I left so we could visit Loretta at the rehabilitation clinic.

"Have I mentioned how much I hate my physical therapist?" she grouched after greeting us.

"You were quite clear when I spoke to you the other day! And you know what? Tough it out! We need you at the hospital, and Bobby and Bobby Junior both need you. It may suck now, but it'll be worth it."

"You sound like a damned doctor!" Loretta complained.

"I *am* a doctor," I chuckled. "But I'm also your friend, and I said that as a friend. I'll leave treating you to far braver men and women!"



"I bet you'd make a terrible patient," Loretta said.

"I think you'd win that bet! Still have those numb areas?"

"Yes, both buttocks and the arch of my left foot."

"And the motor coordination?"

"So-so. I'm only allowed to use the rails, and I have braces on both legs, but I can mostly make my knees work the way they're supposed to."

"That's good progress."

We spent about twenty-five minutes with her, including Rachel climbing into bed with Loretta to hug her. Bobby and Bobby Junior arrived just as we were ready to leave. I shook hands with him, he reminded us about the Tuesday dinner at the firehouse, and we left.

Rachel fell asleep in her car seat on the way home, which gave me a chance to let Kris know about my discussion with Bishop JOHN.

"Vladyka broached the subject of ordination," I said. "He mentioned a widowed Antiochian priest who was permitted to remarry and retain his clerical office."

"Outrageous!" Kris exclaimed.

"Which is exactly what I would expect you to say. Vladyka said there was a bit of a clergy rebellion, though it died out quickly. The laity accepted it and, according to His Grace, largely supported it."

"Are you saying you've changed your mind on that topic?" Kris asked.

"Not at all! We agreed no secrets so I simply reported the conversation. He did ask me to teach Sunday School once a month and suggested we discuss ordination in the future. I made the point that you would likely object, and that didn't deter him."

"You're going to make me the 'bad guy', as you Americans call it."

"Again, «ma chérie», YOU are an American! You even have the papers to prove it! And it is not going to make you the 'bad guy'. It simply helps preserve my close relationship with His Grace. If you *insist*, I'll tell him 'no', but I'd prefer to wait and have him ask you. There will be no hard feelings and no animosity, and I'd very much appreciate if you would consider doing it my way."

"Because I love you," Kris said.

"I love you, too!"

"Enough to tell me what you saw on the ultrasound?" Kris asked lightly.

I chuckled, "I'm not an expert!"

"No, but I suspect you know."

"Actually, to be honest, I can't say positively, which is why I said nothing. At six months, unless you see a penis, you can't say unequivocally one way or the other. Our baby was resting in a position where it *appears* there is no penis, but it can be tricky to say for certain. The strong odds are that you have Charlotte Michelle in your womb."

"Are you happy?"

"Absolutely! And you can be sure the Tsarina will approve right up until Charlotte wants Papa's attention!"

"It's going to be what is called in America, 'an adventure'."

"That it is!" I agreed. "That it is."



## VI. Match and Scrambles!

**March 12, 1990, McKinley, Ohio**

"Got a moment, Mike?" Doctor Ross said when he saw me late on Monday morning.

"Sure. What's up?"

"Privately, please."

I nodded, followed him to his office, and shut the door behind us.

"I received our Match list," he said. "You obviously cannot share what I'm about to say with anyone."

"Understood."

"It won't surprise you, but Mary Anderson matched here, as did Ryan Harrison; it might surprise you that Erin Jackson matched here as well."

"Interesting. For that to have happened, she had to have taken a fairly extreme risk. I'm happy about that, obviously. Before I ask you about the other three, do you know if Leticia Jefferson matched with the ED?"

"She did. Brent Williams called to let me know, as he was positive you would ask."

"Excellent. Who else did we get?"

"The married couple and Felicity Howard. We didn't get our third-ranked choice or our sixth. Obviously, Mary had already Matched for the trauma surgery slot. Thoughts?"

"I'm glad we got the Kennedys, and I'm positive Felicity will bust her butt. I'd have ranked her higher, but I understand why you were reluctant to do so."

"Huge red flags, even with her improvement. To be honest, without your strong support, I wouldn't have listed her."

"I believe in redemption," I replied. "Everyone screws up at one time or another. Fortunately, my major screwups have occurred in areas other than medicine."

"And I know you'll do your best to ensure it stays that way."

"I will. Did Brent share any other names?"

"No. Just that one; he said she's the cousin of a friend?"

"My roommate at Taft for the first two years. I was his first white friend, and he was my first black friend. You could have used our interactions as material for one of those goofy sitcoms."

"First black friend? In college?"

"Yes. I mostly hung out with two friends from second grade onward, and there were no black guys on the chess team and none at my dōjō. He grew up in Over-the-Rhine in Cincinnati, and the only white people he interacted with regularly were cops, and you can imagine how that went."

"Badly. Racism is a scourge."

"I agree. That is one of my concerns about Leticia Jefferson, but I know the ED docs and nurses well enough she won't get grief from them. There are others..."

"We all know who they are, and if it were up to me, they'd be out. And I don't just mean out of the hospital; I mean no medical license. Bigotry has no place in medicine, and even if not expressed, it affects how patients are treated. Study after study shows that minorities receive substandard care, even when presenting at the exact same hospital."

"That is unconscionable," I replied. "But if you look at the details, you'll see it's actually a question of insured versus uninsured versus Medicaid. Guess which have the worst outcomes, irrespective of race?"

"Medicaid."

"Exactly. You're better off being uninsured than having Medicaid because there is no gatekeeper of any kind. Yes, the hospital has to eat the cost, but we make those decisions purely on medical need. *Our* judgment of medical need, not the government's."

"Sad but true," Doctor Roth agreed.

"Anything else?"

"Not at the moment. Go have your lunch. And I'm sure you'll stop in to see Brent."

"I will!"

I left his office, let my students know I was going to lunch, then left the floor. I walked to the ED, but Brent Williams was in a trauma, so I headed down the

long corridor to the cafeteria. I got my food, saw Sophia and her friends, and went to sit with them.

"The anticipation is killing me!" Sophia declared once I'd quietly prayed.

"You'll Match, I'm sure."

"But I don't find out where until Friday!"

"Been there," I said. "But for me, it was Tuesday morning that ended all the stress. I mean, sure, I was convinced I'd Match here, but knowing I'd Matched meant I was going to be a doctor. And that was the key."

"You couldn't have seriously been worried," Kelly Atkins said. "You were first in your class, and I heard you were the best!"

The way she said 'best' was clearly meant as innuendo, but I ignored it.

"While the odds of not Matching were slim, they weren't zero."

"Only because Mike has a hate-hate relationship with computers and was sure it could find some edge case to screw him!" Sophia declared mirthfully.

"There might be some truth to that," I chuckled. "Though I have switched to tolerance of the infernal devices!"

"Not just edge cases!" Kelly smirked.

"Kelly, stop it!" Sophia ordered. "I mean it. Stop it. Now."

"Who died and made YOU queen bitch?" Kelly asked.



"Nobody. Mike is happily married and faithful. Deal with it and drop it."

Kelly muttered something under her breath, and I decided I was glad I didn't hear it. She was quiet for the rest of the lunch while Sophia, Jenny, Nancy, and I talked about their clinical rotations. Jenny had tried to Match with Moore for Internal Medicine, but I had no idea if she had, and I doubted Tim Baker would share the list with Clarissa in advance. When I finished my lunch, I excused myself and walked back to the ED to see if Brent Williams was available.

"Hi, Brent," I said when I saw him. "Got a sec?"

"Sure. My office?"

"Yes."

I followed him to the office and shut the door behind us.

"Owen let me know Leticia had matched here. I'm extremely happy. OK to ask who else?"

"You know the secrecy rules, right?"

"Yes. Owen reminded me."

"He has to, as I do. Karl Schmidt, Julie Plemons, Mai Liu, and Mike Jorgensen. The last spot didn't fill. Are you available to interview Scramblers by phone?"

"Yes. How often does that occur here?"

"The last two years were fine, but before that, we nearly always had one that didn't fill. Remember, we were a smaller regional medical center at that point."

"When we hit Level I, I suspect that problem will go away."

"Me, too. I'll start receiving inquiries after 10:00am tomorrow. I'll coordinate with Owen for your time."

"Thanks. Any word on the new Emergency Medicine Chief?"

"An announcement is due tomorrow. I'm fairly certain it's Dutch Wernher from Rush-Pres in Chicago."

"Is that his given name or a nickname?"

"Nickname; his given name is Rupert."

"I think I'd go by 'Dutch'," I observed.

"Yeah, me, too."

"CV?"

"Mid-fifties. He switched from Internal Medicine to Emergency Medicine around 1972 and has a good reputation in the field. Graduated from UC Berkeley, attended Emory Medical School, Residency at Bethesda Naval Hospital, and two years at Cam Ranh Bay before leaving the service and being hired at Rush-Pres. Married with three daughters."

"Sounds like a good guy, but Loretta should have that role."

"We still don't know if she'll be able to come back," Brent said, "and that role has to be a practicing physician. That was one of Cutter's criteria -- no more pure administrators."

"That I can't argue with, though I'm convinced Loretta will come back."

"Me, too, but you and I both know it's a potentially long road."

"Unfortunately. Anyway, I'll keep all of that under my hat. Let me know about the Scramblers."

"Will do, and thanks."

I left his office and returned to the surgical ward, and given things were quiet, let my students take their lunch before prepping the afternoon patient. The rest of the day was routine, with three ED consults, two of which were surgical cases, though neither were emergencies. We didn't admit them, but we scheduled surgery for them later in the week.



## **March 13, 1990, McKinley, Ohio**

Tuesday was Match Day, and as had been the case for my friends and me, all the Fourth Years were on pins and needles until the first batch of Match letters were handed out. All of the students who had had their clinical rotations with me had Matched, though other than the names I'd been given by Owen Roth and Brent Williams, I had no idea where they might have Matched.

I took the opportunity at lunch to call Doctor Mertens and inquire how many were Scrambling.

"Six. It's a good year. I see one of the emergency medicine slots didn't fill."

"I'm expecting names from Brent Williams at some point today to begin phone interviews. Are any of the six worth talking to?"

"That's a heck of a question for the Dean of Clinical Instruction!"

"No reflection on you, Doc! There are some people who simply should not be physicians."

"Nicole Caton; middle of the pack, with average reviews. I think she might have overshot for her first choices and was unlucky with her backups."

"What programs?"

"Internal Medicine."

"Have her call Brent Williams," I said. "Well, assuming she's interested in Emergency Medicine as an alternative."

"She'll actually be in my office in about ten minutes to review the Scramble list."

"Are there any other open slots here?"

"One in psych and one in OB/GYN. That's not uncommon; surprisingly, the dermatology slot filled."

"I take it that's a tough sell here?"

"They only have one opening once every three years, and it's been in the Scramble for as long as I've been at the medical school."

"Sorry about not being able to make the guest lectures."

"I understand. How is Doctor Gibbs doing?"

"Not enjoying her physical therapy, but improving every week. She has some numbness in her lower extremities, but she's walking between parallel bars with the aid of braces. I'm positive she'll recover enough to return to the ED, though she might need leg braces permanently."

"I heard Doctor Lindsay will be back on April 1st."

"She's really champing at the bit at the enforced vacation."

"How is your wife? She's in her sixth month, or thereabouts."

"She's doing fine, and Rachel is impatiently awaiting a sister; I believe she'll try to trade in a brother! Too bad for her it doesn't work that way!"

"I was ready to sell my little brother to our neighbors for a dollar when I was five. My dad objected."

I chuckled. "Just one buck? Really?"

"That was more money back then," Doctor Mertens said mirthfully, "but he was, as the saying goes with car dealers, 'priced to move!'"

I laughed hard, "Nice, Doc. Very Nice!"

"You should call me Nora. Do you think you'll be able to lecture before the Fall?"

"Probably not, given things are still crazy around here. I will talk to Owen Roth about the Fall."

"Thanks, Mike."

I thanked her, said 'goodbye', then went to the Cafeteria to have lunch with Clarissa.

"I'm going to guess you know who Matched for the ED and surgery."

I nodded, "Yes, though I'm sworn to absolute secrecy. The last thing we want to happen is to get in trouble with the NRMP. I take it Baker didn't talk to you?"

"He barely knows I exist because I'm in the ED until the end of May."

"And yet you'll receive glowing reviews for the good work you're doing, so no big deal! You'll have two years before it's time for an Attending slot, and you'll have the extra ED experience, including your paramedic ride-alongs! Now you just need flight surgeon status!"

Clarissa laughed, "And you got it just in time for it to mostly be phased out because we're on our way to being a Level I trauma center!"

"Fortunately, there are no continuing training requirements for that which aren't satisfied by my day job!"

"I take it you heard about the new Chief of Emergency Medicine?"

"Yes. UC Berkeley, Emory, US Navy, Rush-Presbyterian in Chicago. Switched to emergency medicine from internal medicine at Rush. Married, with three daughters."

"But you're unhappy because of Doctor Gibbs."

"Yes, but as Brent Williams pointed out, she has a long way to go, and Cutter added a 'no paper pushers' requirement to the job description. You know my

problem with Northrup, though I do make a small allowance for the amount of time he had to spend on the new ED."

"Just over a year," Clarissa observed. "From what I hear, the big challenge is all the new telemetry equipment."

"That's what I hear as well. Buildings are pretty easy, from everything I witnessed with my dad growing up, but the computer stuff is complicated."

"Listen to you! 'Computer stuff'! You're too funny, Petrovich!"

"Tell me that the telemetry isn't a computer."

"Technically."

"In my book, being technically correct is the best kind of correct!"

"Of course it is! You can be a real dope at times, Petrovich!"

"Which, of course, is why you love me!"

"You just go right on with that fantasy!"

"You know MY fantasy, Lissa!" I smirked.

"There is just no way it was THAT good!"

"It's not the 'what' it's the 'who,'" I countered.

"And you could never consummate your relationship with the girl who would have been sublime."

"It didn't hurt she had red hair, green eyes, and a sexy body!"

"My only possible response to THAT is -- «ТЫ НЕКУЛЬТУРНАЯ СВИНЬЯ» (*ty nekulturnaya svinya*)!" ("You uncultured swine!")

I laughed, "One of Tasha's favorite epithets. And I need to get back before my toddlers kill a patient with a safety razor!"

"Oh, give me a break! Erin is an excellent medical student."

"Of course she is, but my membership card in the Residents' Union would be revoked if I didn't disparage them in jest to other Residents!"

"You might have a point...at the top of your head!"

"Love you, too, Lissa."

We hugged, Clarissa headed back to the ED, and I took the stairs up to the surgical wing. When my shift ended, I showered, dressed, and headed to the parking lot where Kris and Rachel were waiting. I got into Kris' Tempo, and we headed to the fire station for dinner with Bobby's company.

"Do you always eat this well?" Kris asked after a fantastic meal of barbecued chicken sandwiches, home fries, and homemade coleslaw.

"Firemen tend to be great cooks," Bobby said. "Though you get a lot of chili, barbecue, and spaghetti. Fortunately, we weren't rudely interrupted by the..."

"DO NOT SAY THAT!" Lieutenant Greer declared. "You know what will..."

And it happened before he could even complete his sentence. The tones sounded then a disembodied voice came over the PA...



*"Station 2; motor vehicle accident with trapped victims; US 23 at Ohio 159."*

Half the company scrambled away from the table, but Bobby and Jim Greer were not on shift, so they remained.

"You're a dead man, Murphy!" Chet, one of the firefighters, growled as he hurried away.

"Smooth," I chuckled. "is the County ever going to fix that intersection?"

"There's money in next year's county budget to change it from a two-way stop to an overpass with ramps. Hopefully, they'll actually do it, but it depends on money from the Feds."

"It's so silly," Kris observed, "that the US government can't simply maintain the roads."

"They can," Lieutenant Greer countered. "It's the state highway that's the problem. The county and state have to put in an overpass and build the ramps, but the federal government will chip in money. The county can't afford to do it without state and federal help."

"It just seems overly complicated. But I'll drop it because I see my husband's eyes rolling!"

"Come by the house on May 1st and see the red banner flown by my unreconstructed socialist wife!"

"Before this gets out of hand," Bobby said, "Captain Brinker has a medal and a plaque for you."

I wanted to protest that it wasn't necessary, but I knew that would fall on deaf ears.

"I'll keep it short," Captain Brinker said, "because I know the men hear me talk more than they want to!"

"Fuckin' eh, Cappy!" Bobby's partner Sam exclaimed.

"You're on report, Bolton!" Captain Brinker said with a grin. "Doctor Mike, please stand."

I stood up.

"For extraordinary service to an injured firefighter and his unwavering support of the paramedic program, I hereby award the Hayes Country Fire Department Citizen Valor award to Doctor Michael Loucks."

He handed me a plaque, then pinned the medal on my shirt.

"Thank you," I said. "No speech."

"Thank God!" Sam grinned.

Everyone laughed.

"I also want to thank you for providing support and encouragement to Loretta," Lieutenant Greer said. "That's actually more important, but we can't give you an award for that."

"Thanks, LT," Bobby said.

"Where's the ice cream?" Sam asked. "They told me there would be ice cream!"

Everyone laughed.

"Is he always like this?" Kris asked.

"Only when he's not on shift," Bobby said. "Then he's all business. But off the clock? He's a bigger clown than your husband!"

"I find that very hard to believe," Kris said with a silly smile.



## **March 15, 1990, McKinley, Ohio**

"How did we do in the Match?" Shelly Lindsay asked when we sat down to have lunch on Thursday.

"Very well," I replied. "I'm sworn to complete secrecy, but you won't be disappointed. The ED didn't fill one slot, and I have a phone interview today with a Scrambler from Michigan State and a face-to-face with Nicole Caton from McKinley Medical School, who failed to Match."

"Scraping the bottom of the barrel?"

"According to Nora Mertens, Nicole is an average medical student with average evaluations who shot a bit too high with her Match list and had bad luck with her backups. She was trying for Internal Medicine."

"And the other candidate?"

"Similarly situated student from UC, but who tried for Emergency Medicine only at major hospitals. Again, a bit of bad luck because if you construct your list

properly, you should Match somewhere. A single interview at a second or third-tier hospital is a fairly safe bet."

"OK, but if they built bad lists, doesn't that show something, too?" Shelly asked.

"All it takes is being fifth or sixth choice for hospitals who don't have overlapping lists. As Nora said, a bit of bad luck. And honestly, I could see that if you felt your interviews went better than they did. We all have a difficult time seeing ourselves as others see us. Paul Lincoln told me he thought he completely blew his interview here, and yet he Matched, so he obviously didn't."

"Mary Wilson actually did blow her interview, but she had great grades and excellent recommendations, so we took a chance. It was nerves, and I'm sure you've seen she's OK with patients."

"Actually, I haven't seen much of her given I'm not on a surgical team, and they have me hopping covering for your lazy butt as well as handling ED consults!"

"Lazy butt?!" Shelly growled in outrage. "They won't LET me come back for two more weeks! I'm ready. It's the damned rules that are the problem, and they don't have any leeway. Six weeks post-op for major surgery before you can come back. And the clock only starts ticking when you're stable."

"And you know why that is! Surgeons are, in general, an arrogant bunch who would lie, cheat, or steal to get into an OR! Present company excepted, of course."

"Of course," Shelly agreed with a soft laugh. "Which is, of course, why Psych objected to you going to your outside psychologist. They figured it was a scam because that is what surgeons stereotypically do."

"And if you had your way, you'd have been in an OR two minutes after you were released. And please have the decency and respect not to deny that to me!"

"Loretta is right! You're a royal pain in the ass, Loucks!"

"Thank you," I replied with a grin. "My psychologist suggested I wear such comments as a badge of honor, and she's not wrong."

"No kidding," Shelly said dryly.

We finished our lunch, exchanged a quick hug, and she left the hospital while I went back upstairs. About an hour later, I called Casey Van Houten from Michigan State to conduct a Scramble interview. He was, as I had expected he would be, an average candidate who would not have made our top ten, but by the end of the interview, I felt he was a qualified candidate. He asked when he would hear, and I couldn't make any promises. I thanked him and said that Doctor Williams would be in touch.

About twenty minutes later, I met Nicole Caton in a small conference room to conduct her interview. My concern with her was she'd listed Internal Medicine at Moore and hadn't been selected. Per my instructions from Brent, I wasn't allowed to ask for their evaluation, which didn't make sense to me. But, because Nora Mertens had said Nicole was deserving, I set aside her failed Match.

"Hi, Doctor Mike," Nicole said. "Thanks for seeing me."

"You're welcome. Have a seat, and we'll do this as a standard Match interview, though with only one physician, instead of a team."

After the usual preliminary questions and her biographical spiel, I asked my first unscripted question.

"Why did you not choose an emergency medicine Sub-I?"

"I had the required Clerkship, and because I wanted to match for Internal Medicine, I didn't think it was important. I had a Pedes Sub-I instead."

Which made sense, though not having an emergency medicine Sub-I had absolutely hurt her in the Match and would potentially work against her in the Scramble for an emergency medicine spot, at least at any urban hospital. She, like Melissa Bush, might need to look further afield.

"I'm not suggesting you'll receive a negative answer from us, but you should ask Doctor Mertens for a list of open Residencies in rural Kentucky, Tennessee, West Virginia, Georgia, and Alabama. They'll be less concerned with a missing emergency medicine Sub-I, and they almost always have open positions."

"I really do not want to work in an area like that."

"And if that's your only choice?" I asked.

"Then I suppose I would. Why didn't anyone tell me I made a suboptimal choice?"

"I have no idea," I replied. "The only thing I can say is something I was told during my time in medical school and something I stated clearly in the alumnus speech I gave at last year's White Coat Ceremony -- every morning when you get up and look in the mirror, you see the person primarily responsible for your medical education. It's not the deans, it's not the professors, it's not the doctors on your clinical rotations. It's you. Period. No exceptions and no excuses."

"I never heard that," Nicole replied. "From anyone."

"Now you have. It's not too late. We might hire you, but if not, you need options. And you're the only one who can arrange those. So, as soon as we finish, go see Doctor Mertens and ask for the list of rural programs which have trouble attracting candidates. I know someone who Scrambled to a spot in Kentucky after failing to Match in *two* Matches. Your other options are research or an insurance company."

"Ugh."

"So, how badly do you want to be a doctor?"

Nicole nodded, "I see your point."

"Good. Now, convince me why we should select you for the open emergency medicine spot."

For the next twenty minutes, she made her case, and when she finished, I thanked her, then went to the ED to report to Brent Williams.

"One name, please," he said. "You, Ghost, and Perry each had two candidates. I'll call or speak to three of them."

I considered which I'd choose and made a tentative decision.

"May I ask why I wasn't allowed to check with Internal Medicine on Nicole Caton?"

"Because we can't check outside candidates. I can't even ask if she was on their list, let alone her position."

"That makes no sense, but OK. Of the two, I'd recommend you speak to Nicole Caton."

"OK. I'll call her and have her come speak to me. I'll call the other two candidates once I finish with Nicole, then decide."

"Just you?"

"We don't have an ED Chief until May 1st, so yep, just me."

"OK. I'm heading back to the surgical ward."

"Thanks, Mike. I appreciate it."



## **March 15, 1990, Circleville, Ohio**

Later that same day, Antonne and the rest of the mentoring group came to the house to have dinner with Kris, Rachel, and me.

"Rachel is such a big girl!" Conchita exclaimed as Rachel climbed into her lap.

"You had your chance," Jordan teased. "Mike was single when you met him!"

"Nothing personal against Doctor Mike, but there was no way I was ready to be a mom as a Freshman! Talk to me in about ten years!"

"You realize his wife is actually younger than you are, right?" Danika observed.

"That's HER problem, not mine!" Conchita declared. "I love Rachel, but I'm very happy to return her after an hour!"



"There are times I'd like to do that after five minutes," I chuckled. "Especially when she has 'no' on repeat!"

"What happened?" Julius asked.

"Rachel accompanied me to band practice but refused to wear her ear protection. Toddlers are not known for their susceptibility to reason, so we had an impasse. She had to sit in the hall and was cross with me for the rest of the day."

"Just wait until she's a teenager!" Jordan exclaimed.

"YOU are still a teenager!" Conchita teased.

"OK, technically, yes, but we don't usually include kids who are eighteen or nineteen in the 'teenager' group!"

"I know a former dean who thought they were not just teenagers but children," I said, shaking my head.

"I've heard about that Dean," Antonne said. "She sounds like a real piece of work."

"That's an understatement. You six are very lucky to have Dean Anderson. She's awesome."

"Not awesome enough," Paul smirked. "I haven't been able to convince her to allow co-ed dorm rooms!"

Everyone laughed.

"Good luck with THAT," Kris said. "You Americans are so prudish!"

"And, once again, «ma chérie», " I said with a grin, "I am forced to remind you that YOU are an American, and I have the paperwork to prove it!"

"Is he always like this?" Jordan asked.

"He's actually behaving!" Kris teased.

"Antonne," I said with a grin, "how are classes going?"

"We're all doing very well," he replied. "I had a call from Doctor Nora Mertens encouraging all six of us to apply to McKinley Medical School when the time comes."

"They're all considering it," Danika said. "But you know I'm going to Stanford."

Which was, in the end, why we hadn't continued down the path towards marriage. Danika, like Katy, felt her best interests were served by going to Stanford, and I not only couldn't argue with that, but I'd insisted she be true to herself and not make that sacrifice on my account.

"Which, as we discussed, is the right choice for you. How is your dad?"

"He's doing well. He did ask that you call him some time to check in. I think he has designs on stealing you for Cleveland Clinic!"

"And Doctor Al Barton in Chicago sent me a Christmas card reminding me he'd like to talk to me when I complete my Residency."

"That's a far different culture from Ohio, and you could live in a rural area and easily drive to Cleveland Clinic. Good luck doing that in Chicago!"

"May I remind you -- and even though they aren't here, your dad and Al Barton -- that I haven't even finished my PGY1 year, and my Residency is at least seven years!"

"Right," Danika said with a smile, "because my dad didn't start working on me to stay in the family business when I was a toddler!"

"Point taken," I chuckled. "He is pretty intense."

"That's one way to put it," Danika said.

"Any trouble with anything for which any of you need my help?"

They all shook their heads, which I was happy to see. We had a wonderful rest of the evening and made our plans for our April meeting before they left.

"So, just how close of a thing was it for you and Danika?" Kris asked.

"In one sense, very; in another, not close at all. She'd have had to give up on going to Stanford and on a Residency anywhere except Moore Memorial or in Columbus. Nothing else would have worked. There was no way I was going to try to move to California with Rachel. If moving had been an option, Danika would never have even been a thought because I'd have moved to Tennessee with Annette Turner-Cooper."

"She was at the wedding, right? With her parents?"

"Yes. Doctor Cooper was my Attending for my OB/GYN rotation. I was living at their house when Rachel was born."

"And Annette offered to comfort you afterwards?"

"An offer I declined," I replied. "Whatever else was true, I was still a deacon at that point, so accepting any offers of that kind of comfort was out of the question. We did date a bit, much later, and if she hadn't had a scholarship to Vanderbilt, things might have been different. But again, as with Danika, our paths didn't align the way yours and mine did."

"Which is what led you to Danijela, and then to me, when Danijela refused to wait until your agreed time to ask her."

"Yes."

"Well, I am not complaining in any way, shape, or form!" Kris declared. "Their loss was my gain!"

"And mine," I replied. "When it comes right down to it, you were the far better choice."

"Not to hear my sister tell it!"

I laughed, "True, but since she started seeing Brett, she hasn't been teasing me nearly as much. I figure she's chosen to torture him instead!"

"I think you may be right! Shall we read to Rachel, say our family prayers, and put her to bed?"

"Sounds like a plan."

"You know, I don't think Charlotte Michelle will mind Papa making love to Mama, so long as he's gentle."

"That sounds like an even better plan!"



## March 16, 1990, McKinley, Ohio

I saw Mary Anderson hurrying down the corridor with a huge smile on her face. She nearly bowled me over, giving me a tight hug.

"Thank you!" she gushed.

"You're welcome! Congratulations."

"Do you know the worst part?" she asked.

"There's a 'worst part' of Matching here?"

"That I can't start training until June 1st! I have ten weeks of scut before then!"

"And a year of scut after," I teased.

"I know you better than that, Doctor Mike!"

"Once again, congratulations."

"Thanks."

She left, and about a minute later, Erin Jackson came up to me.

"I Matched here!"

"Congrats. You had to have taken a fairly severe risk to make that happen."

"Actually, I just called UC and told them they were my second choice, not my first. I was positive they'd move me down the list, and they obviously did. Is there any chance we'll be on the same surgical team?"

"At least some of the time, yes, because they rotate a few times a year. And you'll absolutely be on shift when I'm here because you'll basically never be off shift!"

Erin laughed, "They cut it from ninety-six to eighty hours, so it's not as bad as it used to be! I take it Mary Anderson Matched for trauma surgery."

"The bear hug gave that away, did it?" I chuckled.

"Medical students are supposed to observe everything around them! I'd give you a hug, but I'm very careful with married guys. Wives tend to have a limited tolerance for that."

"True, and it's wise to be cautious. Hugs won't bother my wife so long as they're platonic."

Erin gave me a quick hug.

"Who else Matched for surgery?"

"Bob & Sue Kennedy, a married couple; Felicity Howard; and Ryan Harrison."

"How will that work? The married couple, I mean?"

"They'll be on separate teams, and very little consideration is given for synchronizing their shifts during their PGY1 because it's just not possible. When they get to PGY3, they'll have a better chance of having similar shifts, but the rules prohibit them from being in the same surgery except *in extremis*."

"OK. Well, back to the salt mines!"

I chuckled, "It's not quite *that* bad!"

She left, and a few seconds later, I was paged to the ED. I walked to the lounge to get Todd, and we went downstairs to rule out an appy, which, for once, I did. But that didn't mean the patient didn't need surgery, as he had a bowel obstruction that needed immediate attention. I had Todd arrange to take him upstairs while I went to see Brent Williams.

"What was your decision?" I asked.

"I offered the position to Nicole, and she accepted," he said. "Mainly because she's here and can start June 1st. The other two were from out of state. Neither of them was better enough to not pick the local student."

"Clarissa Saunders will be grateful. What's the word on an Attending?"

"Cutter has it narrowed down to two. He's flying them both in for interviews next week. One from Texas, one from Arizona."

"Did somebody tell them it gets cold here?" I asked.

Brent laughed, "It snows in both Arizona and Texas. One of them went to OSU for undergrad, so that one knows for sure."

"What happens when Loretta is ready to come back?"

"That's up to Cutter, and he hasn't shared that with me. That said, you know we'll have more Residents and Attendings next year because of the new ED. I'm sure there's a spot for her if she can get around reasonably well."

"Thanks. I'm off to assist with a bowel obstruction."

"I know PGY3s who would kill for the opportunities you're getting!"

"Me, too. I wear a Kevlar jacket under my scrubs!"

Brent laughed, "Nice. Get out of here!"

"You're in Lor's chair, so you get Lor's treatment."

"Wonderful," he deadpanned.

I left his office and went back to Trauma 1, where an orderly was helping move the patient to a transport gurney. Todd, the orderly, and Joe, a Third Year, escorted the patient up to the OR where Erin, Todd, and I had an opportunity to scrub in, though I only observed, rather than assisted, as I had not resected a bowel, nor seen that procedure more than a few times.

At lunch, I met Sophia in the cafeteria.

"Well?" I asked.

"I got it!"

"University of California, San Francisco, right?"

"Yes! Obviously, that was just step one, but it was the toughest step. You know nobody is going to beat out a Greek girl for something she wants!"

"Except for a Russian girl," I chuckled.



"Not even close!" Sophia declared. "I heard Mary Anderson Matched for trauma surgery."

"That was as much of a lock as me Matching here. What's your schedule?"

"I start July 1st, and Robby's job starts August 1st. He's going to fly out in May and look for a place for us. He'll narrow it down, and I'll fly out right after graduation to see the two he likes best."

"He's at Stanford, and you're in San Francisco. How close are they?"

"Not close enough, so we'll find a spot somewhere in between."

"I'll miss you guys, but I'm very happy you Matched your first choice."

"Me, too!"

When we finished lunch, I headed back to the surgical ward to supervise Erin and Todd, prepping a patient for a lumpectomy.

"Mrs. Carson," I asked once the prep was complete, "On which breast will be performing the procedure?"

"If you don't know, I'm in real trouble!" she exclaimed.

"I do, but I need to verify that you and the chart agree. I'll actually write my initials on the correct shoulder, at the collarbone. So will your surgeon and anesthesiologist. We certainly don't want to make any mistakes."

"Left," she said. "My left."

Which confirmed what was on the chart and the X-rays. Erin handed me a new Sharpie, which I used to write 'MPL' on Mrs. Carson's left shoulder, then handed it back to Erin.

"That goes in the medical waste bin once Doctor Edmonds and Doctor Clausen sign."

"You throw away a new pen?" Mrs. Carson asked.

I nodded, "Yes. We'll use the pen for the same patient, then dispose of it. The concern is spreading germs from one patient to the next. Nobody has completed a proper study, so we act out of an abundance of caution. I know it seems wasteful, but unless we can quantify the risk, it's necessary. Erin, would you walk Mrs. Carson through the procedure and the consent forms, please?"

"Yes, Doctor," Erin replied.

*[Author's Note: A formal study in 2008 showed there was little risk of disease transmission from re-use of Sharpie markers]*

## VII. An Interview

### March 16, 1990, Circleville and McKinley, Ohio

"Did you get the students you wanted for Residency?" Kris asked when I arrived home on Friday evening.

"We did. We actually did fairly well, landing our top picks, including the one we suggested change her Match selection order. I think everyone is happy."

"Good! Are we still meeting the gang for Chinese food?"

"Yes, and the consensus, according to Fran, is that we'll see *The Hunt for Red October*. I read the book, and I enjoyed it, even though I prefer science fiction to Tom Clancy's political thrillers."

"I've heard good reviews, and I'm OK with seeing it. We'll take Rachel to my parents' house. Oksana decided to stay home tonight."

"I'm not surprised, given she's towards the end of her eighth month. I can't imagine she'd be comfortable sitting in the theatre for two hours and fifteen minutes!"

"Not to mention at least two trips to the ladies'!"

"May I say I'm happy with the initial division of labor with regard to having children?"

"Only if you want to sleep on the couch!"

"An idle threat, and you know it! Let me get the Tsarina ready. Is the plan to pick her up tonight or tomorrow morning?"

"Tomorrow, on the way to band practice."

"And you're still planning to sing at both Proms?"

*"Russian woman! Strong like ox!"* Kris said gruffly, barely concealing a smirk.

I laughed, "If I had said that, I'd be in serious trouble!"

"Yes, you would!"

"Papa!" Rachel exclaimed. "Go to grandma's?"

"In a few minutes. Please put the toys you want in your backpack."

"OK!" she agreed.

About fifteen minutes later, Rachel was safely with her maternal grandparents, and Kris and I were on our way to the Chinese restaurant to meet our friends for dinner. When we arrived, Fran and Jason were just getting out of their car.

"Did Sophia Match with UC San Fran?" Fran asked.

"She did!" I replied. "She's ecstatic."

"I bet!" Fran declared as we walked towards the entrance to the restaurant.

"That's an elite program, and they're doing truly groundbreaking work. How are you holding up?"

"I miss being in the ED, but I'm drinking from the firehose as a surgeon. I'm doing PGY3 work as a PGY1."

"Well, one good thing came out of that nightmare, then," Jason said. "How are your doctor friends doing?"

"Shelly Lindsay is going stir-crazy during her enforced break. She's back in two weeks. Loretta is making progress, but it's slow. Fran, you should go see her."

"You're right, of course. I'll arrange to go on Wednesday. Has her prognosis changed?"

"No. It's still 'wait and see'. My inexpert opinion is she'll walk with braces and a cane or one of those lower-arm crutches. I think she'll be able to handle working in the ED, but it's not up to me. It'll be up to Dutch Wernher, the new Chief of Emergency Medicine."

"Where's he from?" Fran asked as we walked in and moved towards our reserved tables.

"Rush-Presbyterian in Chicago. Ex-Navy, having served in Vietnam. Moved from internal medicine to emergency medicine in '72, which means he must have been one of the first at Rush-Pres, given Cook County had only started a few years before that."

"Sounds like a good guy. I know you wanted Doctor Gibbs."

"I did, but that lowlife who shot up the ED put paid to that, at least in the near term."

We greeted others who had arrived and sat down.

"No Sophia?" Fran asked Robby, who was alone.

"On shift," he replied. "Thankfully, her final OB/GYN rotation has banker's hours!"

We all laughed because that wasn't actually true, though she would end her day at 4:00pm.

Jocelyn and Gene came in and sat down, and I saw something in her face that was quickly revealed.

"We have a baby!" she exclaimed.

"Congratulations!" several of us exclaimed.

"When?" I asked.

"The day after she delivers, which should be by the end of next week. A baby boy who'll be born to a fifteen-year-old girl. She's Lutheran and went through the Lutheran agency in Columbus. They gave her options, and she liked our biographies."

"Clearly, she's mentally challenged," I said with a smirk.

"Watch it, Mik!" Jocelyn said threateningly.

"Ignore him!" Clarissa exclaimed. "Do you get to name him?"

"Yes. We eliminated 'Michael' for what I think are obvious reasons!"

I stuck my tongue out at Jocelyn, something I hadn't done in at least fifteen years. She laughed and shook her head.

"The MD behaving like a toddler!" she exclaimed.

"I reserve the right to revert to our first days of friendship!" I said with a grin.

"Kindergarten!"

"Yep!"

"You're such a goofball, Mik!"

"You know I'm very happy for you. What names?"

"We've narrowed it down to Timothy or Sean."

"Do you have all the things you'll need?" Serafima asked.

"No, but we have a week to get them," Gene said.

"We'll have a baby shower for you," Clarissa said. "Kris, will you help organize?"

"Yes, of course!" Kris exclaimed.

"I'll help, too!" Tasha interjected. "I'm so happy for you both!"

The adoption was the topic of conversation for basically the entire meal. When we finished eating, we all went to the theatre to see the movie, which I enjoyed. It wasn't quite as good as the book, and it was a stretch to see Sean Connery with a Scots accent playing a Lithuanian Soviet submarine commander, but I enjoyed it. The others had similar reactions, including Kris, though she hadn't read the book.

"Some suspension of disbelief is necessary for movies like that," she said as we walked to my Mustang. "But overall, it was entertaining. You have the book, right?"

"Yes. It's on the shelf in my study. It's part of a series of spy dramas, though it started out as a standalone book. There are three other books in the series now -- *Patriot Games*, *The Cardinal of the Kremlin*, and *Clear and Present Danger*. He also wrote a World War III alternate history titled *Red Storm Rising*."

"Have you read any of them?"

"I have *The Cardinal of the Kremlin* on my bookshelf, but I haven't had the time to read it. Maybe I'll read it during my vacation. Hopefully, Charlotte Michelle will cooperate and be born during my vacation time, but babies are so unpredictable. I have a tiny amount of flexibility, but if our new daughter doesn't cooperate, we'll have to do some juggling."

"Fortunately, school will be out, so my sister will be able to help."

"For a definition of 'help', which means being a troublemaker!"

"Only to you!"

"In all seriousness, she's a big help and a good aunt. And, as I mentioned, she's found a new victim to torture!"

Kris laughed softly, "Did I torture you?"

"No, but you're not Lyuda!"

"But you got the best sister, right?"



"I absolutely did, Lyuda's claims to the contrary notwithstanding!"

"Do you know how many children Jocelyn and Gene want to adopt?"

"At least two," I replied. "They were fortunate to get an infant so quickly. It could be years before another baby is available for them, though they're willing to adopt a toddler. I appreciate you being willing to help Clarissa plan the baby shower."

"I'd say it was because Jocelyn was the person who knows every dark secret about you growing up, but you don't have any!"

"Neither does she! Nor Dale, either. We were all goody-two-shoes' growing up. The most trouble I got into was using a vulgar Russian phrase. I was trying to explain it to Dale, but Mom did not care."

"I think putting soap in a child's mouth is child abuse."

"I would never do it, but it certainly did work. As they say, times were different. It's a logical fallacy to hold people in the past to modern standards of which they were not aware and likely could not have conceived. Most significant change comes because of a small group of radical thinkers. That was true in France, just as it was here and in England. It took time for the ideas of «Liberté, égalité, fraternité» or the ideas expressed by...

"We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal, that they are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable Rights, that among these are Life, Liberty and the pursuit of Happiness. That to secure these rights, Governments are instituted among Men, deriving their just powers from the consent of the governed

...to be realized, even in a limited fashion. I'd say both countries are *still* working on it. And I believe you agree, though our proposed solutions are different."

"Says the government doctor, working for a government hospital, treating many patients covered by government health insurance!"

"By *choice*, «ma chérie»!"

"And our children will attend public school, just as you did, and likely a public university, just as you did..."

"Yes, yes," I chuckled. "I'm OK with *social democracy*, not with *socialism*. They are different, the opinions of many of our countrymen to the contrary notwithstanding!"

"You know I like to tease you about it!"

"The story of my life with every woman I know, starting with my mom!"

"And you love all of us!"

"I do."



## **March 19, 1990, McKinley, Ohio**

"What's bugging you?" Carl Strong asked as we ate lunch together early on Monday afternoon.

"What gives you the idea something is bugging me?"

"Just the way you're discussing your training. Even the black swan events of a PGY1 performing surgical procedures in an OR don't seem to have you as up as I would have expected."

"I'm not depressed, if that's your concern."

"No, but if you went there..."

"My mom played those rhetorical games with me from the time I was little. I'm an expert!"

Carl laughed, "OK, but you know that is a major concern for physicians."

"It is, but I think it's more that what I'm doing now doesn't provide the hits of adrenaline that working in the ED did. There's too much routine work, if you will."

"You aren't the first emergency medicine specialist to go through dopamine withdrawal! I don't mean this in a perverse way, but you derive pleasure by working at your maximum, and the more, the better. I recall you were never as enthusiastic about slower-paced medicine despite the fact that slower-paced medicine fed your *other* need -- patient interaction. I think we know which drive is stronger."

"I'd say obviously, but it wasn't obvious until I spent eight months in the ED."

"What does your training regimen look like for PGY2?"

"At least the first three months will be better because I'll be in the ED full-time to train Mary Anderson on procedures. After that, I'll alternate one week in the ED and one on a regular surgical team. That will be much better."

"Shelly is back on April 1st, right? So you'll go back to the ED?"

"Most likely, yes, but there are other considerations. I'm not sure how the contracts for the *locum tenentes* in Medicine work."

"Only YOU would decline Latin phrases we use in English!" Doctor Strong said, shaking his head.

"I gotta be me!" I chuckled.

"I believe those contracts are almost always week-to-week, or at most for a month. You should ask Tim Baker, or maybe have Owen Roth ask Baker."

"Clarissa would be VERY happy if she went back to Medicine. She's not an adrenaline or dopamine junkie!"

"Because in our roles, if the adrenaline hits, it's because something has gone terribly wrong. The same is true for all the pure surgeons. For you, it's part of your job, and you can't wait for the next fix!"

"I'm not going to argue with you on that one! How are things going in Cardiology?"

"The beat goes on!" Carl said.

I groaned, "That was bad."

"You have no room to talk!"

"True," I agreed.

"How are you doing with regard to the incident?"

"Fine. I honestly don't think about it except in relation to Loretta. I saw her on Sunday, and she's making slow progress. If I had to guess, six to eight months, though she can probably go home at the end of April."

"She's walking, right?"

"Yes, between the parallel bars with leg braces. Her coordination is slowly coming back, along with muscle tone, but she still has numbness in parts of both extremities that might be permanent."

"We just don't have the knowledge or tech to fix that completely. Where's Oscar Goldman when you need him?"

"He was the money man! You need Doctor Rudy Wells!"

"Sorry if I'm not up on my 70s TV trivia!" Carl declared with a grin.

"Those science fiction shows were my mainstay -- *Six Million Dollar Man*, *The Bionic Woman*, *Logan's Run*, *Battlestar Galactica*, *Space: 1999*, and reruns of *Star Trek*. Of course, I also watched *Emergency* and *Medical Center*."

"I was more into the cop shows like *Adam 12*, *Dragnet*, *SWAT*, *Baretta*, and *Starsky & Hutch*."

"I never asked, but what brought you to medicine?"

"A college professor. I had enrolled in a chemical engineering program, and during my first year, my advisor more or less talked me into a biochemistry program instead, on the theory that that was the future. When the time came to look into a Master's, he suggested I apply to medical school as well. I took both

the GRE and MCAT, applied to both programs and, in the end, decided on medical school because it was the greater challenge."

"Why cardiology?"

"The first time I actually saw an EKG, besides on television, I was fascinated. From TV, you don't get a true impression of just how much information is available. On TV, it's basically the 'machine that goes ping'."

"That was during your Third Year, right?"

"Yes. There were no Preceptorships at my medical school. They only started here the year before you started."

"You know my theory on that."

Carl nodded, "And there are a number of us who agree; unfortunately, the powers that be at the AMA think requiring an undergraduate degree is sacrosanct and won't even consider radical ideas like six-year medical schools straight out of High School."

"So radical that much of Europe operates that way."

"Socialism!"

"Oh, give me a fracking break!" I chuckled. "I know socialism, and that is NOT socialism!"

"No kidding!"

"My wife teases me about working for a government hospital, which she correctly deduces plenty of our fellow citizens consider 'socialist'. But that's only because they have no clue what that word actually means."

"Nobody ever went broke underestimating the intelligence of the American people."

"H. L. Mencken was not wrong," I replied. "As my friend Melody, who's now an attorney, said -- we know how clueless the average person is; well, statistically speaking, half the people are more clueless than that."

Carl laughed, "I'm going to have to use that! Anyway, I believe our time is up, and we need to get back to our respective services."

He was correct, so we left the cafeteria and took the stairs up one floor, where he turned right, and I turned left. I went straight to Owen Roth's office and was happy to see him.

"Time for a quick question?"

"If it's really quick," he said. "What?"

"I wondered if you knew if the *locum tenentes* contracts were until the end of May?"

"Pedantic to a fault," Doctor Roth declared. "Every other person would just say *locums* or *locum tenenses*!"

"I'd say 'sorry', but I'm positive you know I wouldn't mean it."

"Correct. They're on contract until the end of March, then week to week. Let me guess, you want to be released from your bondage and go back to the ED."

"I'd love to, and Doctor Saunders would be ecstatic to go back to Medicine."

"Did she put you up to this?"

"Only in the sense of bitching about not signing up for the chaos and insanity that can be the ED."

"Let me speak to Tim Baker. Shelly is a hundred percent in my mind, so we'll be back to full staff. I'm OK with you going back to your natural habitat. I'm positive Baker will be receptive, as it'll save him some money, and that's our scarcest resource."

"Thanks."

I left his office and went to find my students to supervise our afternoon procedure.



## **March 20, 1990, McKinley, Ohio**

"I'd kiss you if it wouldn't get me in trouble with your French girl!" Clarissa exclaimed. "A hug will have to do!"

We hugged.

"Did they mention what I consider the one downside?" I asked.

"That I'll still cover the Free Clinic? Yes. I know you really enjoy that, but it's PGY1s only, so it was going to end, anyway. You could always volunteer."



"Eventually. Fortunately, I get to keep my current schedule, which is 0500 to 1700 Monday through Friday."

"Who picks up the extra hours?"

"Other ED staff," I replied. "I'm on call for emergency surgery or disaster protocols."

"Pager duty?"

"Until the end of May. After that, I'll be on the usual rotation of PGY2s for pager duty once every four weeks. Because of my dual specialty, I'll be the first one called in for a disaster protocol, no matter who has the duty pager."

"You'll carry a pager full-time?"

"Yes."

"Better you than me!" Clarissa declared.

I chuckled, "Your name is on the disaster protocol list right below mine."

"What god did I piss off? I was supposed to be in medicine with time to care for my patients, not work in pit lane at a NASCAR race!"

"Poor baby," I replied. "There have only been two protocols in the last four years."

"Oh, sure! Jinx it!"

I laughed, "You have two more weeks in captivity, then you're free to go back to routine medicine."

"I *like* routine medicine!"

"It takes all kinds, I guess!" I grinned.

"Go back to your ward, Petrovich! But thanks for the good news! Lunch?"

"If we can swing it, yes."

We hugged, and I headed back to the surgical ward. One interesting thing about going back to the ED was that both Erin and Todd would be on their emergency medicine rotations. That didn't mean they'd be assigned to me, but given Erin had matched for surgery, I could reasonably request her. That would give her a chance to see more procedures and would work to the benefit of the surgical service.

There was no second surgery for which we needed to prep, so I went to the lounge and had just sat down when Margie came to the door and let me know I had a consult in the ED. Given we weren't busy, I had both Erin and Todd accompany me.

"Are you going to write our evaluations?" Todd asked as we walked to the stairs.

"Yes, though I'll discuss them with Doctor Lindsay. Neither of you has anything to worry about. We'll see what you're really made of on your next rotation."

"You're going back to the ED?" Erin asked.

"Yes. I'll have the same schedule as I have now, so there's a chance you'll be assigned to me at least some of the next two months."

"How is Doctor Gibbs?" Erin asked.

"Slowly improving. She'll be at the rehab facility until mid-April, at least, though I expect the end of the month. I don't see her coming back to work before sometime next year."

We walked into the ED and went to Trauma 2.

"Loucks, surgery," I announced, walking in.

"Hi, Mike," Ghost said. "Miles O'Brien, two, swallowed several button batteries. Ultrasound shows them in the stomach."

"Are you a *Star Trek* fan, Mr. O'Brien?" I asked the dad, standing near the treatment table.

"That obvious?" he asked with a smile.

"To me! Ghost, I'll evaluate, but we'll need Pete Barton to perform the procedures. I could do it if Miles was over twelve years old. Let me perform an exam, and I'll call for Pete to come down."

Ghost and I reviewed the patient's vitals, and then I verified his findings with the ultrasound. Once I'd completed the exam, I went to the phone and dialed the surgical scheduling desk.

"Hi, Jen," I said. "Is Pete Barton free?"

"He just finished a procedure. Do you need to speak to him?"

"I have a toddler who needs an endoscopy to remove two button batteries."

"OK. I'll send him right down."

I thanked her and hung up. Three minutes later, Pete Barton, a pediatric surgeon, came into the room.

"Hi, Mike. What do we have?"

"Miles O'Brien, two; ingested a pair of button batteries. They're in the stomach, so endoscopic removal is indicated."

"Let me take a look, and we'll do it together."

He checked Miles, then explained to Mr. O'Brien what we were going to do. I called for an anesthesiologist, as we needed to sedate Miles, and just under fifteen minutes later, we were ready to begin the procedure.

"Mr. Barton, you'll need to wait outside during the procedure, please," Doctor Barton said. "Nurse, please escort him out."

Kellie escorted Mr. Barton out of the room.

"Mike, you do it, and I'll guide and observe," Pete Barton said.

I moved to the end of the trauma table and prepared Miles similarly to how I would for intubation.

"First, insert the pediatric mouthguard," Pete directed.

I inserted the guard, which would keep Miles' mouth properly open and protect his teeth.

"Use your normal intubation procedure, but push the scope into the esophagus instead of the trachea," Pete instructed.

Using a laryngoscope, I passed the tube into Miles' esophagus, using the camera to guide me.

"I'm in the stomach," I announced.

"Erin, would you give us an ultrasound to give us an external view?" Pete asked.

She did so, and under direction from Pete, I guided the end of the scope to the location of the first button.

"Pass the four-pronged forceps tool down the tube."

The tool was similar to the normal four-pronged forceps, except that it was attached to a long, flexible, braided surgical steel cable.

"Carefully maneuver to grasp the battery, but be very careful not to puncture the stomach lining. Just go slow and be cautious. There is literally no need to move quickly for this procedure."

It took a bit of trial and error to move the tube and forceps into the correct position, with gentle correction and guidance from Pete, but I eventually was able to grab the first battery.

"Now, lock the tool and very carefully withdraw it," Pete instructed. "Todd, a basin, please."

I made sure the alligator teeth were properly engaged, then slowly withdrew the tool and deposited the battery in the basin.

"It's intact, so no problem there," Pete announced after inspecting it. "Let's get the second one."

I repeated the procedure, which was a bit easier than the first time, but I still felt clumsy. Just over five minutes later, I deposited the second battery into the basin. It, too, was intact.

"Those do not go in the medical waste bin," Pete instructed Todd. "They cannot be safely incinerated. Saline bath, then put them in a green pouch and set them aside for proper disposal. Mike, go ahead and remove the endoscope and mouth guard."

I did as instructed, and after we used the ultrasound unit to verify there were no further foreign bodies, Pete announced we were complete.

"Let's go speak to Mr. O'Brien," Pete said. "Ghost, he's all yours."

"Erin, come with us, please," I said as I followed Pete out of the trauma room. She went to the waiting room and brought Mr. O'Brien into the consultation room.

"The procedure was successful," Pete said. "We removed two batteries, and there does not appear to be any damage to Miles' stomach. You should follow up with your pediatrician as soon as possible. If you see any blood in Miles' stool, or he vomits in the next twenty-four hours, bring him back to the hospital immediately,"

"Thank you, Doctor! Can I see him?"

"Erin will take you back. He'll be coming out of the light anesthesia, so he'll be groggy."

"Thanks again!"

He shook both our hands, and Erin escorted him back to the trauma room.

"Good job, Mike," he said. "I'd sign off, but the rules don't allow that procedure to be done except by a pediatric surgeon or under the direct supervision of a pediatric surgeon."

I nodded, "Which is, of course, why I called you! May I ask a question?"

"Of course."

"Why is the cutoff age twelve? At that point, we'd still use a pediatric endoscope for most kids."

"That's true," Pete confirmed, "but it's about the hospital guidelines for when you need a pediatric specialist."

"First menses for girls; twelve for boys. But the requirement doesn't go both ways -- someone over twelve could be seen by a pediatrician."

"Yes, of course, though I'd set the upper limit at fifteen. There are no adolescent surgical specialists, so we discuss each of those early teen cases and decide based on the condition."

"What are the rules for emergencies?" I asked.

"That's a tough call, and it would be the Chief of Emergency Medicine or Chief Surgeon who would have to make that call. Unless it was truly a life or death situation, and I mean imminent, call for a pediatric specialist."

"Got it."

"Have you performed a pediatric intubation?"

"One, besides today's endoscopy. We really do need pediatric specialists in the ED."

"We'll need to do that for Level I certification, though it can be handled the same way Cutter and Roth handled your situation. I'm not sure what Pediatrics has planned, but they have another year to work it out. Anything else?"

"No. Thanks, Pete."

"Write this in your procedure book for my signature, but remember, it's not a sign-off to perform one unsupervised."

"Understood."

He left, and I collected my medical students, and we headed back up to the surgical lounge.

"How dangerous are those button batteries?" Todd asked.

"Minimally," I replied. "And had they gone past the patient's stomach, we'd have sent him home and asked his parents to check his stools to confirm the batteries had passed. If they didn't within a few days, or there was blood in his stool or gastrointestinal distress, they'd bring him back. Unfortunately, that would require an open procedure in most instances."

"Not laparoscopic?" Todd asked.

"Erin?"

"I don't know, but I can speculate."

"Go ahead."



"A combination of lack of experience combined with a lack of space."

"Good speculations. The procedure hasn't been approved for younger children, and the current tools and equipment aren't designed for children. It's similar to the pediatric endoscope and laryngoscope I used today versus adult-sized ones. Let me turn the tables and ask you what would be done if magnets were swallowed?"

"That requires immediate surgery if they've passed through the stomach," Todd replied. "There are far too many possible complications."

"Very good. Any thoughts of what specialty you'll select?"

"I'm thinking cardiology, but I'm not settled on it; I could also go surgery or emergency medicine. I'm doing doubles in cardiology and emergency medicine and singles in internal medicine and surgery."

"Sounds like a good plan. Do you plan to Match in the area?"

"Probably in Pennsylvania, which is where I'm from."

The rest of the day was quiet, and at 5:00pm, I headed home to spend the evening with Kris and Rachel.



## **March 21, 1990, McKinley, Ohio**

"Mike, there are two McKinley detectives here asking for you," Margie said from the door of the surgical lounge.

"Where?" I asked.

"I asked them to wait in the consultation room."

"OK. Be right there."

I left the lounge and walked to the consultation room, where I saw Detectives Tremaine and Kleist.

"Morning, Detectives."

"Hi, Doctor Mike," Jill Kleist said with an inviting smile and a twinkle in her eyes.

"What can I do for you?"

"We're conducting an investigation and wanted to ask you a few questions."

"OK," I said, then shut the door and sat down.

"You worked at the McKinley Free Clinic until mid-February, right?"

"Yes. One shift, on Wednesdays."

"Did you observe any inappropriate behavior of any kind?" Detective Tremaine asked.

I shook my head, "Not that I can think of. I had a few cases with girls who were obviously underage who I referred to social workers, but I suspect that's not what you're referring to."

"No," Detective Tremaine replied. "We've had four complaints about inappropriate touching against one of the doctors."

That didn't exactly narrow it down, as there were different Residents assigned each day of the week, and except for me, they had rotated every two months.

"May I ask whom?"

The two detectives exchanged a look.

"Gale Turner," Detective Kleist said.

"I honestly have no idea," I said. "I was never in a room with him when he was performing an exam, and I never assisted with abortions. His main nurse, Leslie, would be your best source."

"We've spoken to her. Did any young woman ever complain about Doctor Turner or any other member of the staff?"

"No. Other than bitching about reporting STDs to the County Health Department, I don't recall any complaints of any kind."

"What's your opinion of Doctor Turner?"

"He's a good guy, and honestly, I'd be highly skeptical of any complaints. That said, if you have four, that obviously calls my perception into question. Are you allowed to share details?"

"First, are you familiar with the procedures of an abortion?"

"Yes. I observed several D&C procedures during my training, but they were to resolve miscarriages, not abortions. The procedure is similar."

"OK. What we share with you from this point cannot be repeated. Can I trust you, Doc?"

"Yes."

"Is a patient fully sedated during an abortion?"

"Rarely," I replied. "Typically, a sedative is prescribed, but the patient is conscious throughout the procedure. The Free Clinic actually doesn't have the equipment for general anesthesia -- what you would call full sedation. Normally, the procedure would be performed with moderate sedation, which we call 'conscious sedation'."

"How aware is someone during that level of sedation?" Detective Kleist asked.

"They're able to answer questions and respond to stimuli. An extended conversation would require some effort. Recovery from that level of sedation is usually quick, and it doesn't require supplemental oxygen, though a nasal cannula is often used."

"So a patient under that level of sedation would notice being touched?"

"In most cases, yes."

"What does a patient wear?"

"Usually a hospital gown. In my experience, bras stay on, but everything else comes off. That said, it's up to the physician to decide."

"Do you know Doctor Turner's usual practice?"

"No. As I said, I never was in a treatment room or procedure room with him. All of our interactions other than polite greetings were in his office."

"Does he counsel patients in his office?"

"I'm sure it has happened, but the normal practice is to counsel them in treatment rooms and always with a nurse present, no matter where the consultation is done."

"Always?" Detective Tremaine asked.

"Always," I replied firmly. "It's a rule both at the Free Clinic and here at the hospital -- no male staff member is ever alone with a female patient. There is always a female doctor, female nurse, or female medical student."

"And male patients?" Detective Kleist asked.

"There are no rules about male patients. May I ask if you've spoken to any other doctors?"

"I suggested you be our first stop," Detective Kleist said. "You have a history with both of us, and you have a reputation as a straight shooter."

"I could say the same for you," I said with a smile.

"One less douchebag in the world," she said. "Taking him down cost Scott and me each three days on the bench, but it was worth it."

"Psych eval?"

"Yes, and mandatory seventy-two-hour time off or desk duty. Back to the clinic -- are there any circumstances you can think of where Doctor Turner would be alone with a female patient?"

"None that I can think of, no. I mean, I suspect some emergency might require that, but if it happened more than once, I can't imagine why. The procedures are obviously very intimate and proceed similar to a gynecological exam, so if the complaint is about genital touching, it's going to be tough to prove."

"When a young woman is seeking birth control, do you perform a gynecological exam?"

"Generally speaking, no, so long as they've had one in the previous twelve months. That said, if they became sexually active since that exam, then we'd strongly recommend one."

"What else would cause you to perform a gynecological exam?"

"A full-spectrum STD test series, as it requires swabs from the genitals, in addition to the anus and throat. And, of course, there are young women who use the clinic for their annual exams. Those are usually students from Taft or women on Medicaid."

"What do you know about Doctor Turner's nurse?"

"Not much. We had a few short, casual conversations, but most of my interactions were with Trina Carlisle, a Nurse-Practitioner who is licensed to act independently of Doctor Turner for a limited set of exams and procedures."

"Which nurse did you work with?"

"Mostly Michelle Stone, but there were others on occasion."

"Did you ever work with a nurse named Abby Norman?" Detective Tremaine asked.

I suppressed a groan because that was Clarissa's ex.

"No. She left the clinic before I had my first shift there as a medical student."

"But you know her?"

"Yes. She was part of a group that went to Europe the Summer after I graduated from Taft. She was dating Doctor Saunders at that point."

"She's a lesbian?" Detective Kleist asked.

"Yes."

"What do you think of her? Nurse Norman, I mean."

"May I ask why this is relevant?"

"There were a pair of complaints against her in the past. We're wondering if there's a pattern at the Free Clinic."

"Abby and I did not get along, but those complaints don't ring true. I assume nothing came of them?"

"Correct," Detective Tremaine said. "The prosecutor decided the complainants were unreliable and never filed charges. Did you know about that?"

"No. And our relationship was such that she would never have shared that with me. Nobody at the Free Clinic said anything."

"I think that's all I have," Detective Tremaine said. "Jill?"

"Just that Doctor Mike still hasn't come to .38 Special for drinks!"

"I think I'll leave that out of my interview notes," Detective Tremaine said with a smile, closing his notebook.

"Interns have no free time," I said. "Not to mention I have a wife and daughter who need me, and my wife is pregnant."

"Congratulations," Detective Tremaine said.

"Lucky girl," Detective Kleist said with a smile.

"I'm the lucky one! If there's nothing else..."

"The invitation is open," Detective Kleist said.

The three of us got up, and they left. I walked back towards the lounge but was stopped by Margie, who asked me to see Doctor Roth. I walked to his office, and he waved me in.

"Was that about the shooting?"

"No. It was about the Free Clinic, not the hospital, but I'm not supposed to discuss it at this point."

"Please tell me you're not involved."

"Not at all. I did have to fend off Detective Kleist again."



Doctor Roth laughed, "She's about as subtle as a hydrogen bomb! She actually asked about you when she was conducting the shooting investigation."

"I'm not surprised. In any event, it's not about me or the hospital, so nothing to worry about."

"OK. Pete Barton mentioned he supervised you performing a pediatric endoscopy."

"He did, and he confirmed I knew the rules for those procedures."

"Just so you know, it's all about liability and malpractice. I'm positive you or any other Resident could do those procedures on toddlers or pre-teens, but the insurance company does not want to defend a suit where the doctor performing the procedure isn't a pediatric specialist."

"Malpractice suits involving kids are invariably decided against doctors and hospitals, even more than regular suits."

Doctor Roth nodded, "Exactly. We have to pay those off, so we want our ducks in a row to limit our exposure."

"Absolutely. Anything else?"

"No. Keep up the good work, Doctor."

"I will."



## VIII. An Olive Branch

**March 22, 1990, McKinley, Ohio**

"What are you doing tomorrow night while the girls are at the baby shower?" Clarissa asked when we had lunch on Thursday.

"Rachel and I are going to my grandparents' house for dinner with the family; well, not my dad, Holly, and their kids."

"You haven't mentioned them much."

"The relationship is still strained."

"Because of your dad and Holly, right? Not you or Kris?"

"I have, from the beginning, tried to maintain my relationship with my dad, to whatever extent possible. He still doesn't understand my reaction to Liz and Paul, and I think he still believes I condemn him for his affair with Holly and for divorcing my mom. His philosophical system does not appear to have room for love and forgiveness, and he imputes that to everyone."

"I'm not sure what you can do unless he relents on that."

"Me, either. That said, I do have to find a way to see my half-brother and half-sister. Changing topics, can I ask you a question in total and complete confidence?"

"Of course, Petrovich! You know that!"

"Yes, but in this case, I actually needed to confirm. Were you aware of any complaints of sexual harassment or inappropriate behavior by Abby at the Free Clinic?"

Clarissa raised an eyebrow and asked, "How could you possibly know about those baseless accusations?"

"That's the part I can't discuss right now. You're sure they were baseless?"

"Absolutely. Abby insisted that it was two girls who knew she was lesbian and made complaints because of anti-gay animus, similar to Frank Bush and those kids from Faith Bible. The cops investigated and closed their investigation almost right away after talking to Trina, Doctor Turner, and other people at the clinic. I don't know any details other than those, and I only know those because Abby shared. What's going on, Petrovich?"

"I was asked not to say," I replied.

"You're not in any trouble, are you?"

"No. I suspect you'll hear about it shortly."

"I'm not in any trouble, am I?"

"Absolutely not. I promise to tell you when I'm able, assuming you don't find out before then."

"How would I find out?"

"The same way I did," I replied.

Clarissa frowned, but I had promised the detectives that I wouldn't divulge the part of the conversation after they revealed the purpose of the investigation. We finished our lunch, and I headed back to the surgical ward while Clarissa headed to the ED. Two hours later, she appeared in the lounge and asked to speak privately. I got up, and we went to the consultation room and shut the door.

"I just had a very concerning conversation with Detectives Kleist and Tremaine," Clarissa said.

"Probably the same one I had. About the Clinic?"

"Yes," Clarissa confirmed. "I honestly don't believe it."

"Me, either, but the detectives said there are four complaints."

"The first thing that popped into my mind is the anti-abortion protestors that are outside the clinic every day."

"That's new," I replied. "When did it start?"

"At the beginning of March," Clarissa said. "They're on the sidewalk every single day, trying to deter people from going to the clinic."

"And you think it's an attempt to get the clinic shut down?"

"It could be," Clarissa replied. "I mean, think about what public allegations would do, even if they turned out to be baseless."

"It would deter people from going there, especially young women. What group?"

"I don't know. They don't identify themselves, but some of their placards have Bible verses and crosses."

"Which doesn't narrow it down except to the myriad Christian churches in the area or some umbrella group. What did you tell the detectives?"

"I suspect the same thing you did -- I have no knowledge of anything like that occurring."

"Did they ask about Abby?"

"Only tangentially, but they did know I dated her."

"I felt I needed to supply context of how I knew her. They didn't ask for any details once I told them about the Europe trip and the fact that you two dated."

"What happens if the cops close the investigation without filing charges?"  
Clarissa asked.

"I'm not exactly sure how it works, but someone could go to the County Prosecutor, who could open an investigation and file charges even if the cops didn't think there was enough evidence to charge Doctor Turner. My concern there is the County Prosecutor is pro-life and made a big deal about it in his campaign. If he sees a way to harm the clinic, he might simply make the allegations public, even if charges are never filed."

"The city needs that clinic!" Clarissa declared. "And not just for abortions. Abortions are only a tiny fraction of the service they provide."

"Well, if the protestors are Roman Catholic, they probably object to birth control. And I'll wager anyone protesting probably objects to minors being provided with sex education, STD counseling, or anything like that, despite them being able to legally consent."

"Fucking wonderful," Clarissa groused. "I mean, there's no saying if that's the reason, but it would fit the facts. I mean, seriously, Gale Turner? I bet you anything that you're right, and whoever it was who made an appointment with him did so on a pretext."

"I can see how you're thinking, but there's always a nurse in the room for exams if the doctor is male. That's a sacrosanct rule, and I've never violated it, there or here. And it was Gale Turner who impressed on me how important that rule is."

"So what happens if Kasey says he was never alone with a female patient?"

"No clue. I mean, that should be sufficient, but someone could argue she's covering for him because she's his nurse."

"Then it's 'he said/she said'," I replied. "The problem is they have four complaints. If it were one, I'd be inclined to discount it. Two, possibly, based on what was said about Abby. But four? That's hard to discount. Yes, I did suggest it might be a conspiracy of some kind, but is that going to hold up?"

"It doesn't have to, right? The bad publicity from the charges would be enough to ruin Doctor Turner and tarnish the clinic. Think about your concern back when we were Freshmen at Taft."

"Yeah," I sighed. "He'd be totally screwed. He might be able to move out of state and practice, though he'd need a license from the new state, and who knows what might happen with the accusations hanging over his head."

"I don't see any way of protecting yourself against false accusations," Clarissa said. "Even if, say, Kellie backed you, they could say she was lying to cover for you."

"I know," I replied. "It's a lousy situation, and I don't see any solution. Even saying only female doctors treat female patients doesn't solve the problem because similar charges could be made, especially if the doctor were a lesbian. Think how that would play with the County Prosecutor and a jury. And there's another thing to consider -- if something happens to Gale Turner, no Residents could work at the clinic."

"Leaving only Trina. What a mess! Sorry, but I need to get back to the ED. My break is over. But I felt I had to come to talk to you."

"Keep me posted, though I expect we'll hear about the next step."

"Unfortunately."

Clarissa and I left the consultation room, I went to the lounge, and she returned to the ED.



## **March 23, 1990, Rutherford, Ohio**

On Friday, I called my dad and asked if we could visit, so Rachel and I went there first before going to Grandpa Michael's house.

"Hi, Dad," I said when he opened the door to the house.

"Hi, Mike. Hi, Rachel"

"Hi, «Grand-Père»!" Rachel replied.

"This one is 'Grandpa'," I corrected.



Dad laughed and invited us in. I greeted Holly and my half-siblings, Peter and Faith, then set Rachel down with the kids. Once I was sure she'd be happy, I asked my dad to speak privately. He agreed, and we went to his study.

"I didn't realize Kris was teaching Rachel to speak French," Dad said.

"She's not! It's my troublesome sister-in-law who finds it amusing."

"How much Russian does Rachel speak?"

"None. I haven't taught her any at all, and the Kozlovs chose not to, either. Kris doesn't speak French with Rachel; only Lyudmila does. Have you taught the kids any Dutch?"

Dad laughed, "The last person in the family who spoke any Dutch was a lieutenant in George Washington's Continental Army! According to family stories, even he only spoke a little."

"Can we find a way to put everything that happened in the past behind us?" I inquired.

"This is about Liz, isn't it?"

"Not specifically, but she is part of the family. I know I have to work on her, but that won't do any good if you can't treat Paul Reynolds at least cordially."

"You still don't see it, do you?" Dad asked, shaking his head and sounding slightly exasperated.

"I've *always* seen it! I counseled Liz against seeing him again, and she didn't listen to me. That left me with a stark choice -- love and support her, even if I didn't approve or cut her off. But you know what? None of that matters at this point

because they're married, and you have a grandson and another grandkid on the way."

"Liz is pregnant?"

"Yes, and due in early July. Whatever you think of Paul, he's your son-in-law and the father of your grandchild; two, soon. Can you please see your way fit to set aside your animus for their sake? And for Grandma Loucks' sake? I guarantee she wants to see *all* her great-grandkids, though I haven't spoken to her in some time, which is on me, and I'll rectify that.

"All of us -- you, me, Mom, Liz, and Paul have made errors, some of them grievous, but no matter what, we're still part of the same family, even if we don't act like it. Yes, you and Mom divorced, but that didn't somehow erase the fact that you're my dad, and she's my mom, and that Liz and I are your kids, and soon enough, you'll have four grandkids."

"So nothing matters?"

"Everything matters, but no matter what has happened in the past, we can forgive and move forward in love. That's been my point from day one. Paul served his time, including lengthy parole. He's a productive member of the community, a good husband to Liz, and a good father to Mikey. That has to be worth something. Honestly, if *anyone* had a right to complain, it would have been Liz, and she's the *only* one who didn't complain. I called the Sheriff!"

"But you've reconsidered that, haven't you?"

"I wouldn't say that, but I would say that I've considered my thought process, and it was suspect. I was moved by moral outrage that Paul was married and had a kid. Without that, I can't say for sure what I would have done because I acted purely on that outrage."

"You love to use your mom's tactics of dancing around straight answers."

"Because, quite often, there aren't any," I replied. "I see that in medicine every single day. The hardest thing to do is say 'wait and see', and yet, in many instances, that's the correct course of action. Parents *hate* that answer, especially when little Bobby or Timmy swallowed something they shouldn't have, like coins or batteries. If they don't get the kid to the Emergency Department before those pass through the stomach, the answer is to wait for them to work their way through the system.

"The same is true for kids with what might be appendicitis. We have a set of criteria, and if they aren't met, we send them home and tell them to return if the symptoms don't resolve. The reason for that is that in kids, it's tough to distinguish between the early symptoms of appendicitis and some other gastrointestinal conditions. It sucks for everyone, but medicine is not an exact science with straight answers for everything.

"That was perhaps the most important thing I've learned in the past nine years. Don't you think that the overall human condition, from whichever philosophical perspective you want to approach it, has more grey areas than it does black and white answers? I certainly see that mainly because there are too many variables to consider. Think about the moral question -- is it OK to steal a loaf of bread to feed your starving child?"

"Whichever answer I give, you're going to try to score points," Dad said.

"Which reinforces the point I'm trying to make! There is no easy answer. Let me ask you this, though I suspect you won't want to answer -- if Paul had been single and nineteen, would you have felt the same way?"

"Absolutely."

"And if he had been seventeen?" I asked.

"Your sister was fourteen!" Dad protested.

"Yes, she was. And she willingly had sex. The State says she couldn't consent, but she disagrees. The thing is, you would have been outraged no matter what the circumstances because you felt Liz absolutely had to be a virgin on her wedding night. But you know what? That wasn't up to you, nor was it, in the end, any of your business."

"She was fourteen and my daughter! That makes it my business!"

"And when would you say it stops being your business? How old will Faith have to be before you aren't outraged if she chooses to do what you and I both did?"

"Did you come here to pick a fight and rub my nose in it?"

"No. I came here to try to reconcile. I asked you to try, and you immediately pushed back."

"Why can't you leave it alone?"

"Because I love you. I need to get to Grandpa Mikhail's for dinner, but I'll leave you with this thought -- think about the day Liz got married and what Elizaveta said to you."

Dad simply looked at me, so I said 'goodbye', left his study, and collected Rachel. I said 'goodbye' to my half-siblings, and Rachel gave them each a hug. My dad didn't come out of his study, so I bade Holly 'goodbye' and Rachel and I left the house for the drive to my grandfather's house.

"I'll take my granddaughter!" Mom declared with a goofy smile when we walked into the house.

"Hi, Mike! How are you? I'm fine, Mom! How are you?" I teased in falsetto and my own tone.

"You know she does that on purpose, right?" Liz asked.

"Obviously!" I said, handing Rachel to my mom.

"How is your father?" Mom asked.

"Basically the same. I keep trying, but I'm making no progress. For the short term, I'm just going to make sure I see my half-siblings as regularly as I can, and Rachel sees her aunt and uncle."

"That is SO weird!" Elaine exclaimed. "Rachel's aunt and uncle are the same age or younger!"

"Stranger still is that my stepmom, if I called Hope that, is younger than I am. How are you and April doing?"

"Great! I have a boyfriend, and Stefan actually likes him!"

I laughed, "Junior or Senior?"

"Will is a Senior. He plans to go to UC and wants to be a lawyer."

"The plot thickens!" I chuckled. "Good move on that one!"

"I know, right!" she said with a twinkle in her eye.

"How are you feeling, Liz?" I asked.

"No morning sickness and I'm not too uncomfortable yet. That comes in a couple of months. How is Kris doing?"

"Fine. She did send her regards, but Jocelyn's baby shower took precedence."

"They were very lucky to get an infant," Stefan observed.

"They were! Where's Grandpa?"

"He had to run a quick errand. He should be here momentarily."

"Hi, Mike!" Grandpa Mikhail said as he came into the room just then.

"Hi, Grandpa!"

"Dinner is ready!" Grandma called out.

"Talk about perfect timing!" I exclaimed, then went to help my grandmother get the food onto the table.

We had a nice meal, and we caught up on all the family doings, which, for the most part, were mundane. That was actually OK, as excitement in our family tended towards the negative side of the scale, though the two impending births would be positive.

"We're going to have a girl," I said. "Our plan is to name her Charlotte Michelle."

"Rachel got her wish!" Liz declared. "No baby brothers, and no BIG brothers. Wait, they're the same thing!"

"Love you, too, Lizard Breath!"

"Boys are loud!" Rachel declared.

"That often doesn't go away with age!" my grandmother interjected with a smile.

"Excuse me?" I said with a similar smile. "I'm quiet, and so is Grandpa. And Dad was as quiet as the grave."

"The Borodin men are thinking men," my grandfather said soberly.

"Mostly about how not to upset our wives!" I chuckled.

"A good point!" my grandfather said with a smile of his own.

"Rachel thinks little Viktor is loud, and he's is a very rambunctious kid, or as I've heard said, a hundred percent boy. Geno says little Viktor takes after his uncle, which I believe, given neither Viktor nor Geno is excitable in any way."

"Papa?" Rachel said.

"Yes?"

"Potty?"

"I'll take her," my mom offered.

"NO!" Rachel said fiercely. "PAPA!"

"Oops," Mom said.

"Someone is asserting herself!" Paul smirked.

"Mostly Russian with a dash of French," I said. "The recipe for a stubborn troublemaker!"

I took Rachel to the potty and after she'd finished, returned to the table for dessert. We were in Great Lent, which meant no ice cream, but we did have a fasting-acceptable cake along with our coffee. After dessert, Paul and I helped my grandma clear the table and wash the dishes. After the chores were done, we had coffee in the family room, and at about 9:30pm, Rachel and I left to return to McKinley, which would have us arrive just after the shower ended at 10:00pm.



## **March 24, 1990, Southern Ohio Correctional Facility, Lucasville, Ohio**

On Saturday, after band practice and grocery shopping, Protodeacon Ivan had come to the house, and he and I had driven together to the prison so we could serve a *typika* and I could meet with Frank Bush and the other men.

As usual, Frank and I played chess while Protodeacon Ivan spent time with Nick. When Frank and I finished our games, we moved to the chapel. I was happy to see a total of twelve men in attendance, though I knew many of them might be like Sean Casey -- simply there to break up the monotony of prison life. When the service finished, I had my usual brief chats with each man, checking to see if they needed anything.

"This is the last time I'll see you here," Alan Edwards said. "I'll be released on Tuesday."

"Where do you go?"



"The halfway house in McKinley run by the Lutherans. Any chance you could work some magic and help me find a job?"

"Have your case worker call me, though it's going to be tough with the rape conviction."

"For sure. Is Janice Parker still at Taft?"

"You didn't hear what happened?"

"No."

"She came gunning for me for a perceived slight of a female student, and the end result was she was forced to resign. She's at Northwestern University in Chicago, or was, as of four years ago."

"That actually might make things easier, though they might notify Stacey that I'm being released if she's still in the area."

"I have no idea," I replied. "She'd be twenty-one, and I'd stay as far away from her as possible."

"Trust me, I will. One condition of parole is to not have any contact with the victim."

"What kind of work do you think you could do?"

"Good question. The only job I ever had was after school at McDonald's during High School. I had a full-ride music scholarship that I literally fucked up, and I had enough money saved so I didn't have to work. And then I supplemented with music lessons once I was an upperclassman."

"I'm going to suggest you not try to give music lessons."

"Unfortunately, I agree with you."

"OK. Have your case worker call me, and I'll discuss it with people at church and see if there's anything."

"Thanks, Mike."

"You're welcome."

I knew finding him a job would be difficult at best, as there was a significant difference between a rape conviction and the old charges of statutory rape or contributing to the delinquency of a minor. I wasn't exactly sure how the old rules had worked, but Liz being fourteen had prevented Paul from being charged with rape rather than statutory. And nobody was likely to turn a blind eye the way Mr. Zhuravlyov had with Paul.

Having met with everyone, Protodeacon Ivan and I left the prison.

"Alan Edwards asked me to help him find a job after he's released on Tuesday. He'll be at the halfway house in McKinley."

"That's the man with the rape conviction for a thirteen-year-old girl, right?"

"Yes. I know more details because it happened at Taft when I was a Sophomore."

"And it's hard to come up with mitigating circumstances when the girl was only thirteen. Her father showed some serious restraint."

"Her mom had divorced and was living with a woman."

"Living with..." he asked, his voice indicating his meaning.

"Yes, that way, but that's not relevant except to say that there was no dad involved. In any event, I have to try, even though I think the chance of success is low. The only job he ever held was an afterschool job at McDonald's in High School. His undergrad degree is in music, and with his felony conviction, he can't teach."

"Do you know if McDonald's hires felons?" Protodeacon Ivan asked.

"I have no idea, but given his conviction, I can't imagine anyone would hire him where he had contact with minors."

"Good point."

"I'll talk to Viktor Kozlov and see what he thinks. He has several businesses, and perhaps he'll give Alan a chance. I doubt it, but I have to try."



## **March 25, 1990, Columbus, Ohio**

On Sunday, after Matins, Divine Liturgy, and lunch, Kris, Rachel, and I went to visit Doctor Gibbs.

"Hey, Lor," I said when we walked into her room.

"Hi, Mike! Hi Kris! Hi Rachel!"

"Hi, Doctor!" Rachel exclaimed.

"I think you can call me Lor, Rachel," Doctor Gibbs said.

"Papa?" Rachel asked.

"That's fine," I replied. "I've instilled in her proper titles, as it's important at both the hospital and at church."

"She's not even three!" Loretta protested.

"And she's my kid! Not to mention she has influence from her mom and her aunt, who if you can believe it, is a bigger troublemaker than I am!"

"Hard to believe!"

"Mike might be telling the truth," Kris said with a smile.

"How are you doing, Lor?" I asked.

"Incremental improvements. It's frustrating."

"I have no doubt. Are they still targeting the end of April?"

"Yes, but I want to be out in three weeks. I'm pushing."

"Are you going to be able to drive?"

"Not at first."

"How will you get to physical therapy?"

"Between Bobby and the other firemen; I'm covered."

"Five days, with two off, right?"

"Yes. I'll have Sundays and Wednesdays off. Eventually, the therapist will come to my house once I no longer need the parallel bars. Have you met the new ED Chief?"

"No. I heard he visited, but I didn't see him. I'll see him on April 1st when I'm back there."

"That is your natural element."

"You're not the first to say that! And it demonstrates quite clearly that switching to pure surgery would have been a tremendous mistake. I'm fairly certain Roth and Cutter realize that now."

"You found a good compromise, if you can gut out the fourth and fifth year when you'll be on regular surgical teams."

"Cutter and Roth are being very flexible with figuring out how to properly train someone who will only be doing a subset of general surgeries. It's highly unlikely I'll be trained in laparoscopy because I'd almost never have a chance to use it. I'm going to do things like appendectomies, laparotomies, and that kind of thing."

"One idea is to figure out the ten most common emergency surgeries and have trauma surgeons focus on those because to be a Level I center, we'll need on-call cardio-thoracic surgeons, among others. On the plus side, I'll spend June, July, and August training Mary Anderson in the ED, though I'll have two weeks off around Charlotte's due date."

"I heard we scored big on the Match overall."

"We did. The ED had to fill a slot with a Scrambler, but we weren't scraping the complete bottom of the barrel."

"Tell me about the Scrambler."

"She was middle of the pack, wanted Medicine, overshot on her first choice, and was unlucky with her backups. She didn't do an emergency medicine Sub-I, which was an error on her part, but I also hold the medical school responsible for not giving her good advice. You know what I said at the white coat ceremony and my philosophy that only the student can properly direct their training. I think this is another piece of anecdotal evidence."

"And you, unlike most physicians, won't lose that idealism when you become an Attending."

"Not for lack of people trying to beat it out of me!"

"It comes with the territory! But that's enough shop talk! Kris, how are you doing?"

"Going to school, caring for two children, and carrying a third!" she teased.

Doctor Gibbs laughed, "I've said the same about Bobby!"

"You two are hilarious," I deadpanned.

"Are you still feeling OK?" Doctor Gibbs asked Kris.

"Yes. Charlotte isn't causing any trouble at the moment."

"You're about six months, right?"

"Yes. I'm due in late June. Classes end the first week in June, so everything should work out."

The three of us chatted for about fifteen minutes before Bobby and Bobby Junior arrived, which was our cue to leave.



## **March 26, 1990, McKinley, Ohio**

"Do you think Doctor Turner knows he's being investigated?" Clarissa asked at lunch on Monday.

"I don't see how he couldn't if they've spoken to people at the clinic. Do you really think Trina or one of the nurses wouldn't say anything? Even if they were asked not to, I don't think there's a thing the cops could do if someone told Gale."

"The reason I'm asking is, wouldn't he have to tell the Board of Directors for the clinic or whomever about it? And wouldn't they likely suspend him pending completion of the investigation?"

"You're talking to the wrong guy," I replied. "Well, unless you think I should take Jill Kleist up on her offer of a 'drink' and engage in pillow talk!"

"Probably not conducive to a long, healthy life!"

"Absolutely not! Changing topics, I saw Loretta again yesterday. She's in better spirits and is pushing hard to get out in mid-April. Bobby arranged for firemen to take her to and from her physical therapy."

"What's your honest assessment, Petrovich?"

"That I don't know enough about spinal injuries to answer that question with any kind of authority. Not to mention, we both know that even the neurologists are often...er, have insufficient knowledge about the physiology of spinal cord injuries."

"What were you going to say?"

"Shooting in the dark', but that felt very wrong."

"Yeah. I have to agree with you that one of the most surprising things about medicine is how much we, as a profession, don't know."

"And that includes knowing certain things work without knowing with any certainty why they work. So much in the past has been basically trial and error, and we even resort to that in the hospital when we try one treatment, then switch to a different one if it's not as efficacious as we had hoped."

"Which is why I'm happy to have time to research and consult rather than be an adrenaline-fueled ED doc! Five more freaking days in the ED, and I can finally go back to some semblance of normal!"

"Me, too!" I grinned.

"You're a nut, Petrovich, but you're my nut!"

"Love you, too, Lissa!"

"Before we have to leave, have you heard talk about a Residents' union?"

"No, but I doubt anyone would bring that up to me. Is this an offshoot of the New York Committee of Interns & Residents?"



"Supposedly someone from New York was here talking to a couple of PGY2s last week."

"I'm not sure how much traction they'll have, given our working conditions are better than most. Not to mention pay scales here are actually what Jesse Jackson calls a 'living wage'. I'd say they'd have more luck in Chicago, Los Angeles, San Francisco, and maybe Philadelphia and Boston. Those were all on the list of worst pay-to-cost-of-living ratios. I think Melissa Bush is, all things being equal, better paid than Residents at New York public hospitals."

"Have you heard from her?"

"No. I was thinking about talking to her now that I've developed a relationship with her dad, but I'm not sure she'll be receptive."

"Speaking of that, how did things go with your dad on Friday?"

"I extended the olive branch, and it was slapped out of my hand again. My dad still sees Paul as no different from Charlie Fox."

"That's a load of crap! Fox attacked women. Your sister, despite what the State of Ohio says about consent, was a willing participant. There's a huge difference."

"You know that, I know that, Liz knows that, and to an extent, my mom knows that. My dad, not so much. On a related topic, Alan Edwards is being released tomorrow."

"I bet Dean Parker is losing her mind right about now! Is he on parole?"

"Similar to Paul, he'll go to a halfway house here in McKinley. He asked me to help him find a job, but with a conviction for straight, not statutory, rape, that's

going to be a tough sell, especially given his only relevant experience was flipping burgers when he was in High School."

"And, of course, you're going to help him."

"That is what I signed up for when I agreed to take on the ministry," I replied.

"What's your take?"

"That he was an idiot. He actually acknowledged that to me when I first spoke to him, and he took full responsibility for his actions. But there's no chance of finding someone like Mr. Zhuravlyov in this instance."

"I bet he's enjoying the beach in Florida!" Clarissa smirked.

I chuckled, "If Mrs. Zhuravlyov allows that! But from what I hear, parts of Florida are like Southern California, where you can't walk ten feet without seeing a gorgeous girl."

"At least at Spring Break! I do need to get back. I don't have the leisure time of a prima donna surgeon!"

"Uh-huh. All I can say is I'm happy not to have the regular scut of a PGY1 surgeon. That would have driven me completely crazy! And yes, I know, it's a short drive!"

"You said it, Petrovich!" Clarissa smirked.

We got up, returned our trays, and returned to our respective services.

"Doctor Williams would like to see you in the ED," Marjorie said when I walked past the nurses' station.

"Right away?"

"Before the end of your shift, if possible."

"OK. I'll go down and see him as soon as I check on Erin and Todd."

I went to the lounge, confirmed that they had all the labs and paperwork for the afternoon surgery, and then the three of us went to prep the patient. Once that was completed and he was on his way to the OR, I went down to the ED to see Brent Williams.

"You wanted to see me?" I asked.

"Yes. Shut the door, please."

I closed the door to the office and sat down across from him.

"Doctor Wernher wants to meet with each ED staff member next week, which includes you because you have shifts."

"That makes sense."

"Yes, of course. I wanted to warn you that he's of the opinion that anyone who works in the ED works for him, period."

"Wonderful. He'll have to take that up with Cutter and Roth. And he'll get no traction, given the Hospital Board created the position and the reporting structure."

"I agree with you, but I believe he's going to lobby to change that. And it also means he'll be looking for things that support his position."

"Are you telling me he's going to be gunning for me?" I asked.

"I would never say that," Doctor Williams replied, making it clear that he actually was.

"Just what I needed," I replied. "I don't need a crystal ball or tea leaves to know what's going to happen."

"I agree. May I make a suggestion?"

"Of course."

"Dial it back a bit, at least at first. If you hit him like a ton of bricks the way you did Isabella, it's going to be ugly. And I suggest you take a more deferential style with him. Let Owen or Cutter fight with him if necessary."

"I can do that."

"Between you and me, he's a no-nonsense authoritarian, which is exactly what we don't need. Northrup could be that way on occasion, but he also mostly left us alone. Wernher is tasked to be completely hands-on."

There was a knock at the door, interrupting us.

"Come in!" Brent called out.

"Multiple burn victims from a chemical fire," Ellie said. "First victim in about four minutes."

"Thanks, Ellie. No total count?"

"No. Just 'multiple' from County Dispatch."

"Thanks. Mike, stick around; we're probably going to need you."

"Let me call upstairs, and then I'm all yours!"

"I wish!" Ellie exclaimed, causing both Brent and me to laugh.

"Still married," I said to Ellie, getting up.

We left the office and I went to the nurses' station and used the phone to call Marjorie to let her know I was staying in the ED for a possible consult, and asked her to send Todd down. She agreed, and two minutes later, he and I were standing in the corridor awaiting the arrival of the first EMS squad.

"You haven't had your ED rotation, so you probably haven't encountered severe burns," I said. "It can be seriously nauseating your first time. If you feel queasy, step out until you recover, then come back in. There is no shame in vomiting; just make sure you use an emesis basin."

"So it really is as bad as they say?"

"Worse. Especially if I have to do an escharotomy."

"How do you do it?"

"Sheer willpower. The first time with a severe burn victim, I was queasy but willed myself to not vomit. The escharotomy made me question my choice of specialty."

"Is that the worst thing?"

"Yes. It's even worse than the train versus car victims we've had. Mainly because the worst of those are left to the County Coroner at the site. Fundamentally, as grievous as those injuries are, they are only blood, muscle, and bone. Gory, but once you've been in surgery a few times, not something that's going to cause you to lose your lunch. If any of these victims have third-degree burns, you won't be alone if you feel nauseated."

About a minute later, the usual organized chaos began with EMS delivering two victims, both with second-degree burns and smoke inhalation. Two more arrived shortly after, neither of which needed a surgeon.

"Mike, can you take the next one?" Ellie asked. "Everyone else has a patient."

"Are there any treatment rooms?" I asked.

"Only Exam 6 is empty."

"We may need to juggle rooms if this next victim is in worse condition."

"I'll see if we can clear one of the trauma rooms," she said.

"Thanks."

"Let's go, Todd. You need to put on a gown, goggles, and gloves. Masks are optional."

The two of us grabbed the protective equipment and donned it as we walked to the ambulance bay, just as the third EMS squad arrived. It pulled to a stop, and Roy jumped out.

"Jennifer Wade, nineteen; smoke inhalation; no other injuries; PO<sub>2</sub> 91% on five litres; BP 130/90; pulse 90; no IV or drugs administered; LOC but came to after sixty seconds on oxygen."

"Exam 6," I ordered, then said, "Hi, Jennifer. I'm Doctor Mike. We'll take good care of you."

We quickly moved the young woman to Exam 6, and the four of us, assisted by Becky, who had followed us in, moved the patient to the exam table. Becky switched the oxygen to the hospital system, and Roy and his partner left. I asked Todd to hook up the pulse oximeter, which he did, and I saw that her vitals were close to what Roy had reported.

"How are you feeling, Jennifer?"

"I have a bad.....headache and my chest hurts."

"How long were you in the smoke?"

"About.....ten minutes, I guess. I was..... at my desk, then felt dizzy.....then the firemen had carried me out."

"Becky, ABG, Chem-20. Todd, get a portable EKG unit. Ellie or Nate can show you where they are."

Thirty minutes later, I called for a pulmonary specialist to admit Jennifer for observation. Don Duke arrived, confirmed the diagnosis, and accepted Jennifer onto his service.

"We were lucky," I said to Todd. "Nothing more serious than second-degree burns and smoke inhalation. Let me check with Ellie, then we'll head back upstairs."





## IX. Yes or No?

### March 28, 1990, Circleville and McKinley, Ohio

On Wednesday morning, the headline of *The McKinley Times* caused my heart to sink.

#### Local Doctor Arrested on Sex Abuse Charges

Doctor Gale Turner, the most senior physician at the McKinley Free Clinic, was arrested by McKinley Police on multiple charges of sexually abusing young women who used the services provided by the Free Clinic. Doctor Gale was arrested by the Harding County Task Force, comprised of Sheriff's Deputies, McKinley Police Detectives, and the Ohio State Police.

The Times attempted to reach someone in authority at the clinic for comment, but we were unable to do so before press time. At press time, no attorney of record was shown for Doctor Turner. Doctor Turner is being held in lieu of a \$500,000 bond in the Hayes County Jail.

I tossed the paper on the table, downed the last of my coffee, and headed to the hospital for my shift. I went to the locker room, changed into scrubs, then went to check on Erin and Todd. They confirmed that all the pre-op labs were back and that nothing prevented either of our two patients from having their surgeries.

We prepped the first patient and had them in the OR at 6:00am sharp, then returned to the lounge. I had a busy morning with three ED consults, and just after 10:00am, Marjorie let me know that Clarissa was on the phone.

"What happened with the Free Clinic?" I asked.

"It's open, but I have the day off because, without an Attending there, I can't work. Trina is keeping her appointments, but they have to send anyone who needs a doctor to the ED."

"Wonderful. Do you know what they're doing?"

"Trying to hire a *locum* OB/GYN. Trina said they hope to have someone by Monday."

"Were the protestors still there?"

"Yes, but now with signs that mention the arrest."

"That was awfully fast!"

"A poster board and a jar of paint or markers? And it was in the paper this morning."

"I suppose."

"Do you think he's guilty?"

"I don't know what to think, but I still find it hard to believe."

"Me, too. Trina said it's all BS."

"If anyone would know, it would be her."

"I'll let you go. Tessa and I both have the day off, which is rare."

We said 'goodbye', and I hung up. About twenty minutes later, I had another call.

"Doctor Loucks, this is Mark Van Zandt from Dismas House. Do you have a moment to talk about Alan Edwards?"

"I do. I go by Doctor Mike professionally."

"My apologies. Alan says that you might be able to help him with a job?"

"Do you have his skills assessment?"

"I do."

"If you'll fax it to me, I'll discuss it with some men from church and see what's possible. I'm sure you realize that a rape conviction where the victim was thirteen is going to make this extremely difficult."

"Yes. Only murderers are more difficult."

"You know, I've never asked, but what happens if they're completely unemployable?"

"That's up to the judge and parole officer. Generally, if the parolee follows the rules and makes an effort, they could be placed with law-abiding relatives, if they have any, even if that was out of state. They can also qualify for public assistance, though housing is often a problem. There are some agencies that do provide low-cost housing, but none in McKinley."

"OK. If you'll fax that assessment to me, I'll get to work."

I provided the fax number for the fax machine in the lounge, and we ended the call. Five minutes later, I had the assessment, which was as bad as I had expected. With an undergrad degree in music and no work experience except two years at McDonald's in High School, it was going to be tough to place him.

His physique wasn't suited to manual labor, and according to Elias, none of the apprenticeship programs would take convicted felons for at least two years after they had completed their sentence. He was thirty-one, which was another strike against going into one of those programs.

The rules he had to live by made things even more difficult, as, for example, he couldn't try to find music gigs in any place that served alcohol. There were other restrictions, including associating with known felons, though that one could be waived by the parole officer so that Alan could take a job where another felon worked.

All I could do was make phone calls or speak directly to the men at Saint Michael and the Cathedral and hope something came of it. Given I could be interrupted at any time when I was at the hospital, I'd do that at Vespers or the Divine Liturgy. I walked to the locker room, put the assessment in my locker, and returned to the lounge just in time to be called for a consult in the ED.

"What do you have, Isabella?" I asked when Todd and I walked into Exam 2.

"Ken Jones; thirty-six; rule-out appy."

"Good morning, Mr. Jones," I said. "I'm Doctor Mike from surgery. I'm going to evaluate you, and if I confirm Doctor Mastriano's diagnosis, we'll take you upstairs right away."

"It hurts like a mother, Doc."

I nodded and performed a physical exam, detecting rigidity and guarding, and confirmed with an ultrasound that he had a seriously inflamed appendix requiring immediate surgery.

"Todd, call up and let them know we have a hot appy and need an OR immediately."

"Right away, Doctor!" Todd replied.

"Linda," I said to Doctor Mastriano's student, "we need a gurney. We won't wait for an orderly."

"That bad, Doc?" Mr. Jones asked.

"You have a significant inflammation, and we want to get you into surgery before your appendix ruptures. Isabella, I recommend a prophylactic dose of cefuroxime."

She agreed and gave the order to Jamie, who administered the antibiotic.

"OR 2 in ten minutes," Todd announced. "Doctor Edmonds."

"Thanks. Mr. Jones, I need to get you to sign consent forms and go over the procedure with you, including the risks."

"I'll sign, Doc. If you don't do it, it'll burst, and I'll die, right?"

"That would be the most likely outcome, yes. I do need to review this with you, but we can do it quickly. You'll be given general anesthesia, which has significant

negative outcomes for a small percentage of people, including coma or death. In addition, all surgeries risk infection, and that risk is higher with appendicitis. Your appendix could burst, leading to peritonitis, which could result in death."

"How often do those happen?"

"Rarely, but they do."

"Let me sign. The pain is killing me!"

Unfortunately, with only ten minutes to go before surgery, I couldn't give him anything for the pain. I handed him the clipboard, and he signed the forms, which I countersigned and clipped to his chart.

"Let's set up on a five-lead," I said. "That'll save time upstairs."

"Linda, five-lead, please," Isabella said to her student.

Linda set up the five-lead and connected the portable monitor, and Jamie switched the nasal cannula from the hospital system to a bottle. Once that was complete, Todd, Isabella, Jamie, and I helped Mr. Jones slide onto the gurney.

"Linda," Isabella said. "Go with Doctor Mike and bring back the portable monitor, please."

Linda, Todd, and I pushed the gurney into the corridor, then towards the elevator. Three minutes later, we delivered him to the surgical team in OR 2.

"Scrub in as second surgeon, Mike," John Edmonds said. "Your students as well."

"Todd, go let Erin know and join me in the scrub room."

He left, and I headed to the scrub room, where Mary, the scrub nurse, assisted me in donning gloves, a gown, a mask, and one of my trademark black surgical caps. I entered the OR and took the place reserved for the second surgeon. Mr. Jones was hooked up to the necessary monitors, and anesthesia was being administered as the nurses prepared for the procedure. Todd and Erin joined us, with Todd standing in the observation spot and Erin standing next to me to assist with suction, retraction, or any other task assigned to me by Doctor Edmonds.

"He's under," Doctor Plumb, the anesthesiologist announced. "Good pressure, pulse, and sats. Clear to proceed."

"Here we go!" Doctor Edmonds stated. "Mike, we're performing an open procedure. Ready?"

"Yes."

The procedure was routine until Doctor Edmonds ligated the inflamed appendix when fluid began flowing from it.

"Rupture!" I declared.

"Son of a..." Doctor Edmonds growled. "OK. Terry, lavage kit to Mike please. Fran, hit him with the pre-filled dose of cefuroxime; Mike, I'll cut; you remove the organ with forceps."

"Jackie," I called out. "Forceps and basin!"

Everyone moved quickly, and thirty seconds later, all those tasks had been accomplished.

"Mike, pour in the saline for lavage; Erin, suction."

I took the stainless steel pitcher and poured a litre of saline into the open wound, and Erin carefully suctioned it out. We repeated that twice more, before Doctor Edmonds declared the field was clean and we worked together to close the incision. Ten minutes later, we were finished.

"Great job, John," Doctor Plumb said. "His vitals were good the whole way through."

"Mike, get him to Recovery; chart a standard course of high-dose IV antibiotics against sepsis. Keep him on the cardiac monitor and have your student stay with him for the next two hours."

"By your command!" I replied.

Doctor Edmonds laughed, "I take it you saw the *Battlestar Galactica* poster in my office?"

"I did!"

Erin, Todd, and I scrubbed out, then escorted Mr. Jones to Recovery, where Erin hooked up a cardiac monitor and pulse oximeter. I wrote the orders on the chart, then gave Erin verbal instructions.

"If he spikes a fever over 38.5°C, his PO<sub>2</sub> drops, he has respiratory difficulties, or there are any cardiac anomalies, call me immediately."

"Yes, Doctor."

I spoke to Janet, the charge nurse for Recovery, and relayed the orders for the IV antibiotics. She immediately retrieved the appropriate IV bag and connected it.

"I'll be back in thirty minutes to check on him," I said.



Todd and I left Recovery and returned to the lounge.

"How often does that happen?" he asked.

"It's actually rare that it ruptures during the procedure, but around 10% of the cases we see involve ruptures. In many cases, the pain isn't bad enough for the person to come to the ED until they're vomiting or they spike a fever. There is also the problem of what amounts to a false signal -- when an appendix ruptures, pain can disappear temporarily until peritonitis sets in."

"I was really surprised to see you pour saline into his abdominal cavity."

"You have to wash out any of the fluid that flows from the appendix, and the only way to do that with any level of reliability is a warm saline lavage; suction alone can't do it. Even so, we pumped him full of antibiotics, given that peritonitis is a major risk. Normally, one dose is all we give, and that's pre-surgery. Post-surgery all depends, but it's usually oral antibiotics that we'd give after any surgery."

"And recovery?"

"Longer, and he'll stay around five days instead of the usual two. Other than that, the risks are similar for any open abdominal procedure."

"Is there anything we could have done differently?"

"From the time I was called for the consult? No. Ten minutes is basically the absolute minimum from ED to OR. I didn't look at the chart to know if there were any delays in the ED. And we don't know how long he delayed coming to the hospital."

"Couldn't you save time by having the ED doc simply make the call?"

"Theoretically, yes, though ED docs are not, generally speaking, trained to evaluate a patient for surgery. In the case of a hot appy, they could, as there is a scoring system based on symptoms, and it can be confirmed by ultrasound. A seriously inflamed appendix in the typical anatomical location is easy. But it can also be hidden behind other organs or be atypically formed. That can mislead someone who isn't a specialist."

"I'm going to ask something that might get me in trouble..."

"No question you could possibly ask me will get you any trouble of any kind unless you ask me to violate the law."

"You're an Intern. How are you more qualified than Doctor Mastriano, who's an Attending?"

I laughed, "That is the flaw in the logic. The answer to that is really territorialism, which is part of the whole system of political BS that I do my best to avoid. That said, at this point, nine months in, I do have more experience in the OR than Doctor Mastriano does. But you're absolutely right that in June, when Mary Anderson becomes an Intern, she'll perform surgical consults starting her first day. I had one significant advantage over Mary, and that is that I opted for a Sub-I in pathology."

"Nobody does those unless they're going into pathology."

"A false statement, given I did."

"OK, but you know what I meant, right?"

"Yes, of course. And I know the thinking behind avoiding that Sub-I, but there's an alternative way to think about it. Consider what that might be, and I'll ask again after lunch. Let's go check on our patient for the afternoon surgery."

After we checked on the patient, I went to Recovery to check on Mr. Jones, who had not come out of the anesthesia, but had good vitals. I left, went to the cafeteria, ate a quick lunch, then returned to Recovery to find that Mr. Jones was awake. He had expressed discomfort, and the nurses had followed the standing orders of a mild analgesic.

"What happened, Doc?" he asked.

"Your appendix looked us in the face and gave us the finger," I said.

He laughed and grimaced, "Don't make me laugh, Doc."

"Sorry. We were just about to remove your appendix when it ruptured. We were prepared and got you cleaned up to limit the risk of peritonitis, but you'll need to stay in the hospital for five days, most likely."

"It's sick time, so I'll get paid for lying in bed for a week!"

"Erin is going to stay with you, and I'll come check on you in about an hour."

"Nothing personal, Doc, but she's a hell of a lot easier on the eyes than you are!"

"On that, we agree! Erin, no changes in my orders."

"OK, Doctor Mike."

I left and returned to the lounge.

"Before I send you to lunch, why would a prospective trauma surgeon think a pathology Sub-I was valuable?"

"It would be a refresher in anatomy."

"Absolutely, and that's the second most popular answer on the board!"

Todd laughed, "Nice. What's the number one answer?"

"What are the rules for using a scalpel for anything other than debriding a wound?"

"Only doctors."

"Yes..."

"You could practice surgical techniques in pathology that you would otherwise have no way to practice!"

"Exactly. Go get your lunch, and I'll see you here in thirty minutes to prep our patient. Erin is staying with Mr. Jones."

He left, and I relaxed until he returned. We prepped our afternoon patient, and once he was safely with Doctor Burke, I returned to Recovery to check on Mr. Jones.

"I'd say we can move you to a regular room," I said once I'd performed an exam. "Erin, make the arrangements, please. Once he's transferred, you can get your lunch."

"Will do," she agreed.

"Mr. Jones, I'll see you during afternoon rounds," I said.

"Thanks for everything, Doc!"

"You're welcome."

The afternoon was routine, I had dinner with Kris and Rachel, and then we went to Saint Michael the Archangel for the Vesperal Divine Liturgy. After the service, I asked Viktor if we could speak privately before he and Yulia took Rachel for her biweekly visit.

"I have a significant challenge from my prison ministry," I said. "A recent parolee is at Dismas House and is looking for a job."

"What was he convicted of, and how much time did he serve?"

"Eight years for sex with an underage girl, but which was classified as rape because she was thirteen."

"And you're seriously asking for my help?!"

"Yes, and I needed to, though I was reasonably certain of the answer. I do know more about the circumstances, as I was tangentially involved."

"How so?"

"The girl was the precocious daughter of the dean with whom I had all my trouble. The arrest happened while I was taking music lessons from Anicka Blahnik, who was his professor."

"There's just no way I can do that, Mike. You can ask Geno, as he's mostly running things now, but the employees would stage a revolt if they ever found out."

"I'm open to ideas," I said.

"I wouldn't even know where to begin. I don't believe any of the men would be receptive, given they all have daughters or granddaughters."

"That was my fear, but I do have to try because I was asked as part of my ministry."

"I understand. I don't believe you'll have any luck."

"I strongly suspect you're right. I'll discuss it with His Grace on Sunday."

"Changing topics, have you met the new Chief of Emergency Medicine?"

"I will on Monday. I'll be back in the Emergency Department full-time."

"What do you know about the Doctor at the Free Clinic who was arrested?"

"That I find it hard to believe, but there were at least four complaints, which indicates my perception might have been off. That said, the organized protestors have an incentive to see something like this happen."

"You think it might be a setup?"

"The Free Clinic rules about male doctors being alone with female patients are similar to the rules at Moore Memorial. I've never seen them violated at the Free Clinic, but then again, I was only there one day a week."

"Did you hear that the Kelsey Foundation is reviewing their funding?"

I sighed, "If the clinic loses that, they'll have to close."

"You can imagine the tough spot they're in, given they funded Doctor Turner founding that clinic."

"So their solution is to punish the entire community because of allegations against a single doctor? That makes no sense at all!"

"It's about public perception, Mike."

"Maybe so, but that doesn't change the fact that health in the community is going to suffer from their actions, and that will give the protestors exactly what they want as well."

"You know my position on that."

"I do. And you know mine. It's a legal, accepted, widely used medical procedure. And like all other medical procedures, between the individual and their physician. Would you support the Jehovah's Witnesses if they attempted to ban blood transfusions because they're against their beliefs?"

"Sophistry, Mike. That's not going to happen."

"It's not sophistry at all. Either individuals make medical decisions in consultation with their physicians, or they don't. You always push the point of individual freedom, except on this specific topic."

"Because it's murder, Mike," Viktor said firmly.

"You'll certainly call this sophistry, but murder is *unlawful* killing. Abortion is legal, even if it's morally repugnant when done electively. There are plenty of things I find objectionable, including vanity cosmetic surgery, but it's not up to me. I am required to get consent from my patients except *in extremis*, and if a patient and I agree a procedure is necessary, nobody should interfere -- not you, not the government, not lobbying groups, not insurance companies."

"There are things we'd never allow, even with consent!"

"Oh, I agree, But that would be things with no proven medical efficacy, or at least a reasonable potential for it. We do experimental procedures under tight controls, but we do them. Sometimes, they seem almost barbaric, but then again, so are the accepted treatments for many forms of cancer where, in layman's terms, we give a slightly sub-lethal dose of chemicals in the hopes that it will kill the cancer without killing the patient."

"We're going to have to agree to disagree on abortion."

"That's fine, so long as you don't do an end-run and make it illegal, thus forcing me to agree with you."

"You object to it!"

"I do. I also object to extreme measures in hopeless situations, but it's not *me* who gets to decide for everyone. Yes, I made that decision for your father based on our history and my knowledge of his overall health, but that's the exception, not the rule. Anyway, my bottom line is that the Free Clinic needs to stay open, and taking away funding because of these allegations, serious as they are, is a bad idea."

I extended my hand, and Viktor took it. We shook, then I found Kris, took her hand, and walked out of the church.



"How did that go?" she asked once I had helped her into the car and got in the driver's seat.

"About as I expected. He's not going to help, and I expect the same answer from the men at the Cathedral."

"What would you do in their position?"

"It's a difficult situation because while Christian ethics ask us to love even the worst sinners. It's also the case that ministering to those who are or have been in prison is held out as an ideal. Viktor has to balance his responsibilities to his other employees and his customers. This is different from Paul's situation, where he pled guilty to statutory rape. Some people can see past statutory, but Alan pled to a straight rape charge."

"Because she was thirteen?"

"I don't know. In Eileen's situation, one of the charges was carnal knowledge of a minor under fifteen, which I found strange, given the age of consent is sixteen. It's possible there was some other rule for girls under fourteen, but I don't know. It also wouldn't surprise me if Dean Parker bullied her daughter into saying Alan raped her, whereas Liz insisted all along that not only was it consensual, but she basically chased Paul.

"The law has changed since then, too, and since the mid-80s, there is no 'statutory rape' charge -- it's classified as aggravated criminal sexual assault. Whatever you think of the age of consent, the change in charge was absolutely because of reactions like the one Mr. Zhuravlyov had. People easily forgave the idea of 'statutory rape' because it made it clear it was consensual, but that the girl was underage."

"You don't think that's right?"

"It's a difficult situation, really. On the one hand, I am absolutely positive Liz not only consented but actively sought it out. On the other hand, there do need to be laws to protect younger girls."

"What will happen to this man?"

"That's up to the parole officer and a judge, but if he can't find a job in six months, which is when he has to leave the halfway house. I'm not sure what happens if he has no place at all to go or what public assistance would be available."

"When we get home, I could use a back massage."

"I'd be happy to do that!"

"And I'll be happy to reward you for it!"

"Not necessary, but I won't object!"

"No kidding!" Kris said lightly.



## **March 29, 1990, McKinley, Ohio**

On Thursday, after my shift, I drove to the Hayes County Jail, which was across the parking lot from the Sheriff's Department. I identified myself as a chaplain and physician, which meant any conversation was privileged. After going through the usual security checks, I was led to a booth. Through the plexiglass, I

saw Gale Turner in an orange jumpsuit. I picked up the phone, and he did the same.

"Hi, Mike," he said.

"Hi, Gale," I said, looking him straight in the eyes. "Yes or no?"

"No. It's a total fabrication."

"Do you have an attorney?"

"Yes. Walter Burch, from Columbus."

"Are you going to be able to make bail?"

"Tomorrow. It took some time to get together the ten percent for the bond. We didn't want to put the house at risk. It was worth a couple of nights in jail to protect Tricia and the kids."

"What can I do for you?"

"Be a character witness, if you would. My attorney will be in touch in the next few days."

"Absolutely. Have you spoken to anyone else?"

"Just my wife, who has visited each day, and my attorney. Why?"

"Just curious. Did anyone tell you that the Kelsey Foundation is considering pulling their funding?"

"Oh, hell!" he sighed. "That would be the end."

"You should probably have your attorney get in touch with them and let them know the charges were fabricated. Do you know who the accusers are?"

"Four girls in their late teens or early twenties. I've seen at least one of them picketing after visiting the clinic."

"Circumstantial, but a strong indication of a setup."

"Did the cops talk to you?"

"Yes, and I told them I had no knowledge of any improper behavior and explained the rules about male medical staff and female patients."

"I never once was alone with a female patient. Never. And I have two nurses who will swear to that."

"OK. Let your attorney do his thing. I learned that lesson several years ago when a false accusation was made against me."

"You weren't arrested, though, right?"

"My attorney managed to head that off, but it was a very close thing. It would have wrecked my chances of being a doctor."

"Even if I'm cleared here, I'll still have to sit for a fitness review with the Medical Licensing Board."

"I'll testify on your behalf," I replied. "I've appeared before them in a malpractice case."

"I heard about that from Trina. How is your friend doing?"

"About as well as can be expected with schizophrenia."

"That's rough. Your wife is due soon, right?"

"Early June. I do need to get home, but I wanted to check on you and look you in the eye."

Gale nodded, "I understand. Thanks for having faith in me."

"Call me when you get out, and have your attorney contact me."

"I will. Thanks, Mike. I appreciate it."

I replaced the receiver, stood, and put my hand on the plexiglass. Gale put his hand on the opposite side, then was led away. I left the jail, and headed to Viktor's house to pick up Rachel and then head home for dinner with Kris.



## **March 30, 1990, McKinley, Ohio**

"I saw Gale Turner yesterday," I said to Clarissa at lunch on Friday. "He'll be out on bail today. He says the allegations are total fabrications and that one of the accusers was picketing after her appointment."

"I had my doubts, even though I made the comment about the picketers, now I'd say I was right. What now?"

"He has an attorney, but I seriously doubt he could go back to work until he's cleared. Well, assuming he's cleared. You know the system is rigged against

defendants. I was lucky to not be arrested when I had all the trouble with that Orosco bitch."

"What are you going to do?"

"I'll testify if his attorney wants me to."

"I will, too."

"I'm positive the nurses and Trina will as well. It's going to be 'he said / she said', and his reputation will be ruined even if he's acquitted. He could even lose his license because the standards are lower for that than for criminal conviction."

"Won't someone have to make a complaint?"

"Sure, and if they're willing to lie to the cops and in court, what is going to stop them from lying to the medical board? Honestly, I have a sneaking suspicion that if the Kelsey Foundation pulls their funding and the Free Clinic closes, this will all magically disappear."

"Seriously?"

"If Gale is telling the truth, and I looked him square in the eyes when I asked him, they'll have achieved their goal without risking perjury charges."

"Can't he go after them for false accusations?"

"How do you prove that? And how will the newspaper play that? He'd hurt himself more than if he just let it go and joined a private practice somewhere."

"And the entire community loses because the Free Clinic has to close."

"Unless they can get funding, but given the protests and the attitude in the county in general, including the County Prosecutor, that's going to be tough. Given the County Prosecutor's position on abortion, I think we both know he'd be quick to bring even flimsy charges."

"What can we do?" Clarissa asked, sounding despondent.

"I don't have any ideas, and until we have our licenses, we can't do anything without a supervising physician, and who's going to put their butt on the line?"

"Yeah," Clarissa said, shaking her head.

"On the plus side, Jos called to let me know that the young woman is in labor and should deliver this afternoon."

"That's great! I guess that means we don't see them tonight.

"I'd say that's the case. I'll invite them to the house next weekend. You and Tessa will be invited, too."

"Thanks! I need to get back to work! And you have to finish your last day in captivity!"

I chuckled, "I will be very happy on Monday, though I'm not looking forward to meeting Doctor Wernher."

"Just be smart, Petrovich!"

"Brent Williams and I had a conversation about it. I'm going to handle it the way I handle church, where I leave things to the bishops to sort out, then follow *my* bishop, who, in this context, is Owen Roth. With Cutter as Medical Director, I think I'm on solid ground leaving it to them."

"And yet, my admonition about being smart remains."

"Yes, Dear," I said flatly.

"Don't be an idiot, Mike!"

"I won't."

We stood and hugged, and after we returned our trays, we headed back to our respective services.



## March 31, 1990, McKinley, Ohio

Just before Kris, Rachel, and I left for band practice, Jocelyn called to say that they had named their baby Timothy Sean. I invited them for dinner on Thursday evening, and she accepted. I had verified that with Clarissa, as I'd forgotten about my planned trip to see Father Roman.

At band practice, we finalized our set list for the two Proms and rehearsed the songs in order. Nobody felt there was any need to have separate lists, which made things much easier. Rachel coöperated and wore her earmuffs without a fight, which was a good thing, and Kris and I practiced our duet, though we knew there was a good chance she wouldn't be able to sing with me. If that happened, Kari would stand in. She and I would rehearse during April, just in case.

After band practice, we headed to Kroger, and our route took us past the Free Clinic. The protestors were on the sidewalk and now had a sign reading '**Doctors Rape Patients Here!**'



"That's not true!" Kris declared in outrage.

"No, it's not. They've escalated, and I honestly think the clinic will close next week. It's inevitable because they are in an untenable position."

"What can be done?"

"Not much, sadly. Hayes County doesn't have the money unless they take it from something else, and finding a charity to support a clinic will be difficult in the short term and maybe even in the long term. I'm sure you've heard of the violence at various clinics around the country. We've been lucky here so far."

"Could this affect you?"

"Directly? I doubt it, though I might be targeted for defending Gale Turner."

"You have to do that, Mike."

"I won't back down, and neither will Trina or Clarissa."

"Good."

We completed our grocery shopping, including a visit to the bakery, then headed home for a quiet afternoon as a family, dinner, and Vespers.



## April 1, 1990, Columbus, Ohio

I struck out completely with the three men at the Cathedral who I felt were the most likely to be able to hire someone, and was basically out of options when I went to see Vladyka JOHN.

"I'm not sure what more we might do, Mischa," he said. "Sometimes there are no earthly solutions to the challenges we face."

"I'm aware, and I knew this was likely an impossible task."

"Remember, your obligation is to try, and to do the best you are able to do with the resources available. You won't always succeed. I expect it's similar at the hospital."

"Yes. There are times when we have no options, or at least no good options."

"That frustrates you, I suspect."

"It does."

"Be sure to discuss it with Father Roman when you see him. That's next weekend, is it not?"

"It is. Lyudmila will stay at the house with Kris and Rachel while I'm gone. Kris didn't feel it wise to make the trip."

"That doesn't surprise me at all! Back to the prison ministry -- how are the other men to whom you're ministering?"

"I'd say they're doing as well as anyone could do in prison. I'm developing a good rapport with them and even friendships. I'm sure Protodeacon Ivan reported that we had more men at the *Typika* than in the past."

"Yes. And even if none of them ever take a formal step to become catechumens, we have to trust that the Holy Spirit is working in their hearts."

"How would we handle catechism if that happened?"

"An Antiochian Parish in Ben Lomond, California, has put together a course in basic Orthodox theology which could be used. The catechumens would study it and discuss it with you when you make your monthly visit. I'll give you the contact information for Conciliar Press, their publishing house."

"I've heard they have an Orthodox school."

"Ben Lomond Academy," he replied. "If only we had the resources to do something like that."

"I went to public schools and didn't turn out too badly," I said with a smile.

"I was not disparaging public schools! But wouldn't it be nice to have that option?"

"Yes, it would."

"How are things at the hospital?"

"I'm back in the Emergency Department full-time tomorrow, which is a good thing. We have a new Chief of Emergency Medicine, and that might not be a good thing."

"Because it's not your friend who was shot?"

"Partly, but also because the new Chief has a very different take on how to run the department from his predecessor and the Chief Attending and Chief Resident."

"I believe you know how to handle that, Mischa. After all, you are in a hierarchical church!"

"Yes, of course, but there are hints of what I would politely call internecine struggles, or to put it more directly, political warfare."

"Then, do your job and allow your superiors and the hospital administration to sort it out. I know you have very strong ideas, Mischa, and you are very eloquent, but there are times, and I say this in love, to shut up and obey!"

I laughed, "Why do I feel you've said that on more than one occasion to a troublesome priest?"

"Because I have, but only to them, not to others who might take matters into their own hands the way the four knights did at Henry II's comment about Thomas Becket.

"I would hope not!" I chuckled. "But I understand your point."

"If you need to bend my ear, Mischa, do so. The same is true with Father Roman. At the hospital, focus on your patients and leave the others to worry about political matters."

"Something I have striven to do since day one. Sadly, every time I think I've escaped, I get drawn back in."

"Then remember your prayer rule. You've practiced *hesychasm* in the past; practice it now."

"Yes, Vladyka."

"Then I'll see you in two weeks."

I stood, asked his blessing, then went to find Kris and Rachel so we could visit Doctor Gibbs.



# X. Dutch Treat

**April 2, 1990, McKinley, Ohio**

I suppressed a sigh when I walked into the ED just before 5:00am on Monday morning. Two things jumped out at me immediately. First, a nameplate reading *Doctor R. 'Dutch' Wernher, Chief of Emergency Medicine*, had replaced what had been the Attending's office. Second, a sign on what had been the lounge door read *Attendings and Residents Only*.

I recalled that Doctor Wernher had been in the Navy, and it appeared he had decided to create the equivalent of an Officers' Club in addition to commandeering the only office. I walked over to the nurses' station, where Ellie and two other nurses were standing.

"Do I even want to know?" I asked quietly.

"No," she replied.

"No nurses or medical students in the lounge?"

"No. Nurses are to be with patients or at the nurses' station. Our breaks are scheduled and have to be taken in the cafeteria."

"When does the strike begin?" I asked.

"You're not far off, Mike. But be very careful. Rumor has it he spent two hours bending Cutter's ear about you on Friday."

"Wonderful. Where do the medical students hang out when they aren't busy?"

"Chairs by the ambulance bay."

"OK. Nobody is going off shift, so I'll take the first chart in the rack."

"Mike, you aren't on the ED rotation."

"What the?" I asked.

"I don't know. Doctor Wernher will be here momentarily; you should see him."

"This is going to be bad," I said.

"For everyone," Ellie confirmed.

I considered going to see Owen Roth but decided that might anger Doctor Wernher, so I asked Ellie to let me know when he arrived, then went into the lounge, where I saw Kylie Baxter and Antonio Gómez.

"Hi, Mike," Kylie Baxter said. "Welcome to Hell."

"I got that idea. I'm not on the ED rotation even though I'm assigned here."

"And without Clarissa here, we're shorthanded if you don't see patients."

"I tried, but Ellie told me not to take a chart."

"The nurses are pissed."

"I got that idea as well."



"Doctor Loucks?" a doctor who appeared to be about fifty said from the door to the lounge.

"That's me," I said. "I go by Doctor Mike. You must be Doctor Wernher."

"My office, please."

Kylie had her back to the door so she could roll her eyes without being seen. I followed Doctor Wernher into his office. Judging his personality by the little I knew, I stood straight, not quite at attention, and waited for him to indicate I should sit.

"Shut the hatch and grab a seat," he said.

That one phrase telegraphed one of two possible scenarios -- he was through and through military, which did not make sense given he'd been out of the service for nearly twenty years, or it was an affectation to achieve some purpose.

I shut the door, sat down, and waited for him to speak. I wasn't intimidated by silence, and I was positive I could sit quietly and look him in the eye longer than he could do it. As the seconds dragged on, the silence became more and more obvious, but I simply recited the Jesus Prayer and waited him out. I absolutely wasn't going to fight with him, but I also wasn't going to be intimidated by him.

It was about seventy seconds before he finally spoke.

"You're the one with the temerity to design their own Residency program."

"While it's true I lobbied for it here at Moore Memorial, the program was designed and developed by Doctor Albert Barton while he was at Indiana University and implemented at University of Chicago Hospital where he's Chief of Emergency Medicine."

"You know Al Barton?"

"He arranged for a scholarship for me at Indiana University, but I elected to go to McKinley Medical School. He recruited me for the Match, but I elected to Match here."

"MCAT and MLE scores?"

"98th MCAT; 99th MLE Step 1; 99th MLE Step 2."

"You had that MCAT and didn't go to Stanford, Yale, or Harvard?"

"I had no desire to do anything but serve my community," I replied. "There were personal considerations as well."

He shook his head in obvious disapproval. I really wanted to ask what HE was doing at Moore Memorial training students from McKinley Medical School if he thought so little of it, but I held my tongue.

"I'm sure you observed some of the obvious changes I've implemented to bring order to the chaos that preceded my arrival."

"I did," I replied, electing to keep my answers terse.

"Nobody takes shifts in my ED unless they're on my service. And nobody works in my ED without wearing ED scrubs. If you want shifts here, you're ED staff, and you wear blue scrubs. Otherwise, you're surgical staff and are limited to consults in the ED. My staff is also clean-shaven, and men wear their hair cut short. And we do not use informal titles."

Given my beard and ponytail were religious, I knew I was legally entitled to an accommodation, but there was no possible way to raise that at the moment without starting an unproductive argument.

"It is your ED," I agreed. "Have you spoken to Owen Roth?"

"I've spoken to John Cutter, and I was given a free hand in the ED. There is some debate about your status, but I expect to resolve that today. We can solve it right now, if you want to be an emergency medicine specialist. I have an open Residency spot."

"My Match was for trauma surgery," I replied. "That is what I want to do."

"Then go up to surgery, and we'll call for consults when we need you."

"Yes, Doctor," I said, standing up. "May I be dismissed?"

"Dismissed."

I left the office and walked past Ellie, exchanging a look but saying nothing, and headed for the elevators. I rode up to the surgical floor, stepped out, checked the board, and walked to the scrub room for OR3. I put on a mask and a generic red cap, then stepped into the OR proper.

"Hi, Mike," Doctor Roth said, looking up. "I take it you talked to Doctor Wernher."

"Yes."

"And he kicked you out of the ED?"

"Only after suggesting I move to his service."

"I was afraid of that. Did you get into it with him?"

"No. I was the model of an obedient Able Seaman."

"Good. We'll fix this. For now, handle consults. You don't have med students, but you can use Shelly's Fourth Year. I do need you to do one thing for me."

"What's that?"

"Call Tim Baker and tell him 'Dutch treat'."

"May I ask?"

"He'll pull his Resident. I mean, if we're going to be territorial, we're going to be territorial. Baker is onsite. So is Getty. I'll see you after I get out of this guy's guts."

"Thanks," I said.

I went to the lounge and dialed Doctor Baker's direct number and was happy that he answered.

"Doctor Baker, this is Mike Loucks. Doctor Roth said, 'Dutch treat'."

"God damn it!" he growled. "OK. Tell Owen I'll do it right now."

"Will do."

"And Mike, let us fight; you stay out of it."

"That was my plan."

"Good."

He hung up, and I wondered how Doctor Wernher would react to losing *another* Resident, leaving him short three doctors once Antonio Gómez was recalled. I was reasonably certain how this would turn out in the end, but it could be very ugly in the interim. And it would suck because I would mostly be twiddling my thumbs.

I left the lounge and went to the nurses' station to find out who Shelly's students were.

"Aren't you supposed to be in the ED?" Carol asked.

"Don't ask," I replied. "Who's assigned to Shelly Lindsay?"

"Nick Duran and Penny Lewis. Nick is the Fourth Year."

"Thanks. I have my pager. I'm going to Medicine. If the ED needs a consult, page me, please, and send Nick down to meet me."

"Will do."

I left the surgical ward and made my way to Internal Medicine, where I found Clarissa speaking with Mark King, one of the Attendings. She saw me and held up a finger to let me know she'd be a minute. I ducked into the lounge and got a cup of coffee, tossing a quarter in the jar as I wasn't part of their coffee club. A minute later, Clarissa came in.

"Mark King just told me that Antonio was recalled. What happened?"

"Wernher is trying to remake the entire hospital to his liking. Take a walk in the ED and check out what he's done."

"It sounds like I might need an armed escort. What happened?"

"Well, the Attendings' office is now Dutch Wernher's office, and the lounge has a sign that limits entrance to Attendings and Residents -- no nurses or medical students. And that's just the start."

"What the..."

"I was also told in no uncertain terms I can't work in the ED unless I wear blue scrubs, shave my beard, and cut my hair."

"Bullshit!"

"And yet, here I am, waiting on consults rather than working my scheduled ED shift. The nurses are ready to strike because they have to be with a patient or at the nurses' station except for authorized breaks, and medical students are relegated to chairs by the ambulance bay. Roth, Baker, and Getty are all pissed, and that's why Antonio is being pulled. He's not ED staff, so..."

"Jesus. Who is this guy?"

"When he called me into his office, he said, 'Shut the hatch'. He's been out of the Navy for twenty years. Kellie just got out last year, and she doesn't say stuff like that. I think he's aiming to be a hard ass because he called the ED 'chaotic'."

"No kidding it's chaotic! There is no ED on the planet that isn't! It's only a question of whether it's McKinley-level chaos or Cook County-level chaos!"

"He led with me having the temerity to design my own Residency, but I countered, carefully, that it was Al Barton, and that seems to have put that specific complaint to rest because he appears to know Al Barton."

"So now what?"

"I wait for Cutter to solve this. He'll have to because he has three service chiefs who are unhappy, not to mention nurses in the ED. I wouldn't want to take them on!"

"If you were single, you'd take on all of them!" Clarissa smirked.

"Nope! I'm totally not interested in Jamie!"

Clarissa laughed, "If Lee couldn't entice you..."

"He never *really* tried. It was just clean fun, or as Sophia called it, homoerotic play!"

"How long do you think this lasts?"

I shrugged, "No clue. I'm following the advice I have from Brent Williams, Owen Roth, you, and Vladyka JOHN. I'll chat with Shelly Lindsay later."

"What was Cutter thinking?"

"I have no clue."

"I need to get to rounds. Lunch?"

"Call me when you have your break; I'm sure I'll be free unless I'm on a consult."

We hugged, and I left the lounge. I walked back to the surgical ward and went to the lounge, where I found Nick and Penny. I'd met Nick, but we'd never been on the same service. I didn't know Penny except by sight.

"Hi, Nick," I said. "I'm sharing you with Doctor Lindsay. You'll accompany me on ED consults today."

"Great!" he agreed. "I thought you were on the ED schedule."

"There was some kind of snafu with the new ED Chief starting today. I'm sure he and Doctor Roth will sort it out. May I see your procedure book?"

He pulled it from the pocket of his short lab coat and handed it to me.

"Where did you Match?" I asked.

"Oncology at Good Samaritan in the Western Suburbs of Chicago."

"Downers Grove, right?" I asked.

"Yes! Are you from Chicago?"

"No. My dad is from Naperville, and a very close friend Matched at Edward Hospital for cardiology."

"Maryam Khoury, right?"

"Yes."

"I had a Medicine rotation with her. She's awesome!"

"That she is!"



I quickly paged through his procedure book and he checked all the boxes, as it were, with more than the average number of procedures. And he'd had an oncology Sub-I, which meant he knew infinitely more about cancer and chemotherapy than I did, even though I was a doctor and he was a medical student.

"Why oncology?"

"My little brother died of AML when he was six."

"Lord have mercy," I said quietly.

"You lost your wife, right?"

"Yes."

"So you know how it feels, at least somewhat. I was ten, and it ripped me apart. I decided then and there I was going to be a doctor and help kids like my brother."

"We've come a long way since the early seventies."

"A bone marrow transplant might have saved him, but finding a donor then was tough, and I didn't match because we had different dads. And the procedure was still highly experimental."

"Mike?" Carol called from the door to the lounge. "ED consult for a rule-out bowel obstruction in Exam 4."

"Thanks, Carol. Nick, let's go."

"Can I tag along?" Penny asked. "Doctor Lindsay is in surgery until at least 10:00am."

"Yes. Carol, if Shelly comes looking for Penny, call the ED, and I'll send her up."

"OK, Mike."

Nick and Penny walked with me to the stairs, which I preferred to the elevator, and we made our way to the ED. When I opened the door to the exam room, I suppressed a groan because Doctor Wernher was the treating physician. That means following policy to a T and being extremely formal. It also meant I needed to send Penny back upstairs.

"Penny, go back upstairs," I said quietly. "I'll explain later."

She nodded, turned, and left.

"Loucks, surgery," I announced. "What do we have, Doctor Wernher?"

"Kenton Jones; age six; presents with abdominal pain with tenderness and guarding; some vomiting reported; no signs of appendicitis."

"Vitals?" I asked.

"Pulse 80; BP 110/70; PO<sub>2</sub> 98% on room air; respiration labored at 17."

"Labs and treatment?"

"Ringer's for dehydration; elevated white count; slightly hypokalemic; all other levels within range."

A high white count was not typical of bowel obstruction and indicated early-stage appendicitis, though that could be a false sign.

"How high is the white count?" I asked.

"14," Doctor Wernher replied.

That indicated a very low-grade infection and might be completely unrelated to the complaint.

"Hi, Mrs. Jones," I said to the black woman sitting in a chair near the bed. "I'm Doctor Mike Loucks from surgery. With your permission, I'd like to examine Kenton."

"Of course, Doctor!"

"Hi, Kenton," I said. "I'm Doctor Mike. How are you feeling?"

"My tummy hurts bad, and I puked twice."

"Can you point to where it hurts?" I asked.

He did, and barring reflected pain or atypical anatomy, he didn't have appendicitis. I performed a basic exam, explaining each thing I was doing to Kenton. I always disliked palpation because I was inducing pain, but a physical exam was indicated and necessary. Kenton winced and moaned but handled it like a champ.

"Nick, ultrasound, please," I said.

He rolled the machine over, turned it on, and set the controls correctly. I took the gel bottle from the warmer, squirted some onto Kenton's abdomen, and then carefully placed the transducer in the most likely spot.

"OK," said. "I see what appears to be a complete obstruction of the small bowel at the junction of the ileum and jejunum. Mrs. Jones, may I see you in the corridor? Nick, please carefully clean the gel from Kenton's abdomen, then join us. Doctor Wernher, please join us."

The three of us stepped into the corridor.

"Kenton needs immediate surgery," I said. "There is a mass in what you would call his small intestine that is blocking it completely."

"What is it?"

"I can't say at this point," I replied. "We'll perform a procedure called a laparotomy, which is surgery to open his abdomen. We'll examine his small intestine and determine the best course of action. Most likely, it will be what's called a resection -- we'll remove a portion of his intestine. As bad as that sounds, it's a routine procedure and usually has no lasting negative effects on digestion.

"Once we've removed the section, we'll examine the mass to determine what it is and if we need to perform any additional treatment. The usual time to perform the procedure is about two hours, and recovery is anywhere from two to six hours. If there are no complications, Kenton could go home by Friday."

"Will you do the surgery, Doctor?"

"I'll assist," I replied. "A senior pediatric surgeon will perform the operation. I do need to go over the risks and have you sign a consent form."

"OK," she said.

"Let's go to the consultation room," I said. "Nick, get the consent forms from the nurses' station, please."

"I'll stay with the patient," Doctor Wernher said.

I was thankful for that, as that meant I could be less formal with Mrs. Jones. A minute later, she, Nick, and I were in the consultation room.

"These forms are written in a mix of medical and legal terminology," I said. "I'll explain each and every word if you wish, but I can give you a summary in plain English to start."

"A summary would be fine. I'm a chemistry teacher, so I know many of the words."

"Good. The surgery requires general anesthesia, which has risks, including coma and death. Those are extremely rare, but they do happen, and generally speaking, there is no way to know in advance that someone will have an extremely adverse reaction to anesthesia. For the surgery itself, there is a risk of bleeding, infection, or complications that can lead to permanent injury or death. Again, the risks are small, but they are real. Do you understand?"

"Yes."

"If we don't perform the surgery, Kenton will, in all likelihood, die an extremely painful death. Some bowel obstructions resolve themselves with hydration and the use of a nasogastric tube to relieve pressure, but with a complete obstruction by a mass, that is not an option. Is that clear?"

"Yes. What do you mean by 'mass'?"

"It could be as simple as fecal matter or as complicated as a tumor. We could do a CAT scan to get more information, but, given Kenton needs surgery no matter what, I prefer not to expose him to the radiation, as it won't change our plans or the outcome of the surgery. Do you have any questions?"

"No. Thank you for explaining everything so clearly. You have a great bedside manner, too. Kenton really appreciated you explaining everything. The other doctor didn't do that."

"Thank you. If you'll sign the consent form, we'll get Kenton upstairs. The surgery will likely be later this morning. Did he eat anything today?"

"No. He had dinner last night at about 5:30pm but vomited before bed. He woke up about 4:30am crying, and other than a sip of water, he hasn't had anything else."

"OK. I'll look at the chart, but I want to double-check if he has any allergies or is taking any medication."

"No allergies, and no prescriptions."

"What about over-the-counter or supplements?"

"Nothing in the past two weeks."

"Any family history of which I need to be aware?"

"No, his grandparents are all alive and healthy, and so are his dad and me."

I handed her the clipboard and indicated where to sign, then asked Nick to call upstairs and let them know we'd be bringing Kenton up.

"Mrs. Jones, you can come with us. We have a quiet waiting room upstairs, and there's a phone if you want to call Kenton's dad or someone to support you."

"His dad is in New York on business. I suppose I should call him."

"You can do that upstairs," I said. "The nurses will give you a code to make a long-distance call."

"Thank you, Doctor!"

"All part of the service!"

About ten minutes later, Nick and I helped Kenton scoot onto a gurney. Five minutes later, Kenton was in a room in the surgical ward, where he'd wait for surgery.

"Hi, Mike!" Shelly Lindsay said, coming into the room with Penny.

Shelly had obviously left her surgery, as she had a mask pulled down around her neck and was wearing a surgical cap.

"Welcome back, Shelly."

"Who's our friend with the tummy ache?"

"Kenton Jones, and this is his mother, Alberta."

"Good morning," Shelly said. "I'm Doctor Lindsay, and I'm on the surgical team that will perform Kenton's operation. We'll take him in about 11:00am. About thirty minutes before that, the anesthesiologist will come to see you and give Kenton a mild sedative. Nick, draw for a complete set of pre-surgical labs."

"Right away, Doctor!"

"Mrs. Jones, you can stay here until we take Kenton to surgery, and then you can go to the waiting room."

"She needs to call her husband in New York," I said.

"Penny, would you take Mrs. Jones to the consultation room and get the long-distance code from Carol?"

"Yes, Doctor," Penny replied. "Mrs. Jones, if you would come with me."

"I'll stay until you return," I said.

"Mike, come see me once Mrs. Jones is back," Shelly said.

"Will do," I agreed.

Everyone left except Nick, who drew blood. Once he finished drawing the tubes, he left to take them to the lab.

"Kenton, you're going to need an operation," I said. "I explained everything to your mom. Do you want me to tell you what's going to happen?"

"Yes."

"First, a doctor called an anesthesiologist will come see you. He's the doctor who will put you to sleep for the operation. When he visits, he'll give you a drug called a sedative that will help you relax. Soon after that, we'll take you to the operating room. You'll see lots of equipment and at least three doctors and four nurses."



"Will you be there?"

"Yes, unless there's an emergency, in which case I might have to go down to the ED, what you probably call the 'Emergency Room'. In the operating room, you'll also see a lot of equipment, including machines that will measure your heartbeat and breathing, as well as the machine they use to put you to sleep.

"Once you're asleep, the doctors will use tools to remove a small part of your small intestine, the tube that carries food you've eaten out of your stomach. They'll sew everything back together and send the part they removed to the lab to check it.

"When you wake up, you'll be in a room called 'Recovery' where there will be nurses to take care of you. Nick will probably be there, and I might, too, depending on whether there is an emergency.

"You'll stay in that room for the rest of the day, then, once we're satisfied you're doing well, you'll come back here. Do you have any questions?"

"What does it feel like?"

"Nothing. You'll be completely asleep, and you won't feel anything at all. When you wake up, your tummy will be sore, but they'll give you medicine to take away the pain. You'll have to stay in the hospital for a few days, probably until Friday. We'll know for sure tomorrow morning when you'll be able to go home."

"Do I have cancer?"

"I honestly don't know. That's one of the things the lab test will tell us. Cancer is very rare, and even if what I saw on the ultrasound is a tumor, they are almost always benign, which means they aren't cancer, just a strange growth. Once we

remove it, that's it. Right now, don't worry about that. OK? I promise someone will explain everything after the surgery and the tests. OK?"

"Yes."

"What kind of candy do you like?" I asked.

"SweeTarts!"

I had prepped for working in the ED, so I had my fanny pack with appropriate candy selections. I unzipped it and extracted a box of SweeTarts.

"These are for you, but you can't eat them until your mom and the nurses say you can. Promise?"

"Yes!"

"I'll put them on the table here."

"You're cool!"

"I try!"

"I never saw a man doctor with a ponytail!"

"I like to be different," I said.

"Do you have kids?"

"A daughter who is two and a half, and my wife is pregnant with another daughter who'll be born in June. Do you have brothers or sisters?"

"Two older sisters! It's like I have three moms!"

I laughed, "I believe it! I had a younger sister, and she could be pretty bossy even though I was older!"

Kenton's mom returned just then, accompanied by Penny.

"Did you reach your husband?"

"I did. Kenton, there's no way your dad can make it back before you have your operation. He's going to fly home late this afternoon. Doctor, can he visit late?"

"Yes. Visiting hours for parents are unrestricted. I'll make sure the nurses get you a pass so you can get in after 11:00pm."

"Thank you! How long have you been a doctor?"

"About nine months," I replied. "I graduated from medical school at the end of May of last year. Doctor Lindsay has been a doctor for almost six years, and Doctor Anniston, the senior surgeon who leads the team, has been a doctor for more than twenty years. The pediatric surgeon who'll perform the surgery is Pete Barton, and he's been a doctor for fifteen years."

"And the younger man and woman are medical students?"

"Yes. Nick is in his final year and will graduate at the end of next month. Penny has just over a year to go. Nick will be a doctor in Chicago starting in June or July."

"Hi, Kenton!" Nurse Amy said, coming into the room. "I'm Amy, and I'll be taking care of you until surgery! Doctor Mike, I see you're back to your old antics!"

"Guilty as charged," I chuckled. "Mrs. Jones, the SweeTarts on the table are for Kenton once you and the nurses say it's OK. I reward brave young patients with their favorite candy."

She laughed, "I think we can see our way clear to allowing him to eat them as soon as the nurses say it's OK."

"Oh, sure, now *we're* the bad guys," Amy said mirthfully.

"Mrs. Jones, I'll come back in a bit," I said. "If you need anything or have any questions, press the call button or ask any of the nurses."

"Thank you, Doctor."

Penny and I left the room and met Nick, who was returning from the lab. The three of us went to the lounge, where we sat down.

"Sorry about the ED," I said to Penny. "The new ED Chief is a stickler for protocol, and the protocol is one medical student on a consult. Given the circumstances, I didn't feel I could ask for an exception."

"How did you know his favorite candy?" Penny asked.

"I'm just that good," I said with a grin.

Nick laughed, "I heard about that from Doctor Baxter in the ED - he carries the ten most popular candies in his fanny pack and has spares in his locker. They call him 'Kid Whisperer' because, for some reason, kids love him. And it's not bribery because he rewards good behavior after the fact."

"Talk to the kids," I said. "They understand way more than most adults give them credit for understanding. And treat them like the individuals they are, not as some kind of extension of their parents. Penny, you missed it, but when I examined Kenton, I explained each thing I was doing and why and developed trust. Now, if I tell him something, he's going to believe me. I explained the surgery to him in detail a young kid could grasp. You saw him -- he's calm and ready for his surgery."

"Most doctors don't do that, do they?" Nick asked.

"Not with kids. They talk to parents, and the kid is treated almost as an object. What I've found is that kids are much braver than adults if you talk to them and explain things to them. Remember that."

"Mike?" Kylie said from the door to the lounge. "Got a sec for a private conversation?"

"Yes," I replied.

We left the lounge, and the Residents' office was unoccupied, so we went there.

"This has to be quick because I'm on a fifteen-minute break," she said. "Medicine just pulled Antonio, so we're really shorthanded and worse, Ellie just informed Doctor Wernher that the nurses are going to enforce all provisions of their contract with regard to overtime and nurses from other services covering the ED.

"Fighting policy with policy," I replied. "I know about the notice provision for OT, which they almost always waive, but what's the other rule?"

"You know how, at times, we'll borrow an ICU or Medicine nurse when we're short-staffed, with supply nurses covering those services?"

"Sure, similar to how we Residents do it."

"Those all need to be approved by the Nurse Manager, who just happens to be Ellie's best-friends mom."

"And she'll turn down all requests?"

"No waivers of the requirement for emergency medicine certification or currency -- having worked at least one ED shift in the past six months."

"This is not going to end well," I replied. "Patients are going to suffer. What the heck was Cutter thinking?"

"I heard through the usual Residents' gossip chain that Wernher asked for a free hand when he was hired, and Cutter agreed, thinking that meant Wernher would get the lay of the land and propose changes. That changed on Friday morning when Wernher came to see Cutter and dropped his bomb."

"Wonderful. Now what?"

"No clue, but the rumor is you're the main bone of contention. Well, your role."

"Well," I said, "there's always Chicago."

"What?!"

"I bet you anything you care to wager, I could pick up that phone, call Doctor Albert Barton at University of Chicago Hospital, and have a Residency slot tomorrow. And one for Clarissa Saunders, too."

"Take me with you? Please?"

"It's an idle threat," I replied. "Yes, I *could* do that, but I'm not about to cut and run, not to mention everything else that keeps me here. That said, if a rumor were to spread that I *had* called Doctor Barton..."

Kylie smirked, "I know just who to drop that tidbit to, and it'll never be traced back to the source. Anyway, I need to get some juice, so I have to run, or I'll miss punching the time clock."

"Please tell me you're joking."

"I am, but I'm not, if you get my drift."

"Unreal. I take it nobody is supporting Wernher?"

"If they are, they're keeping it to themselves. Kellie is fit to be tied that a Navy man would be such an asshole."

"I can imagine. Just keep your head down."

"No kidding!"

We left the office, and I returned to the lounge while Kylie headed to the cafeteria. If what Kylie was saying was true -- and I had no doubt that it was -- things were going to become very ugly in the ED.

"Doctor Mike," Nick said, "Carol said you had a phone call while you were speaking to Doctor Baxter."

"Thanks."

I went to the nurses' station to get the message and saw it was from Gale Turner's attorney, and had a note that it was OK to call during the evening,

which I felt was the better option. Before I could walk away, the phone rang, and Carol signaled for me to wait.

"Stabbing victim needs a chest tube in Trauma 1," Carol said, replacing the phone.

And instead of me being in the ED with my medical student where I could act immediately, we'd lose two precious minutes.

"OK. I'll get Nick, and we'll head right down."

Just under two minutes later, Nick and I walked past a Sheriff's Deputy into Trauma 1, where Ghost and Paul Lincoln were working on a man who appeared to be in his mid-twenties and was dressed in an orange jail jumpsuit.

"Hi, Ghost. What do you have?"

"Ken Brooks, twenty-two; right-side penetrating trauma; collapsed left lung; BP 90/50; tachy at 110; PO<sub>2</sub> 92% on O<sub>2</sub> by mask. No defensive wounds."

"Chest tube tray to me," I said to Becky. "Nick, seal the wound with a defib pad, please."

I quickly performed the thoracotomy, inserted the chest tube, and connected the Thora-Seal. Once that was done, I listened to Mr. Brooks' breathing.

"Good bilateral breath sounds," I announced.

"PO<sub>2</sub> coming up," Erin said. "93%...95%...96%."

"I'll take him," I said. "Do we have any medical history?"



"No."

"How much blood have you given him?"

"Just one unit of plasma by the paramedics. Blood loss isn't significant."

"Shiv?" I inquired.

"That's what the Deputy said."

"OK. Nick, call upstairs and tell them we have a penetrating trauma that will need surgical repair. Vitals are stable, and blood loss is minimal. Then, call for an orderly. I'm going to talk to the Deputy."

I stepped out.

"Deputy..." I read his badge, "Cullen. Your prisoner needs surgery to repair the injury. We're going to take him upstairs shortly."

"He's not a risk," Deputy Cullen replied. "No cuffs, and I'll come with you and stand outside the OR."

His demeanor told me that there was more to this, as inmates were almost never left un-cuffed during transport. I wondered if he was some kind of undercover officer, given a recent report about drugs being smuggled into the jail.

"OK. We'll take him up in about ten minutes. I'm not sure if he'll go right into surgery or if he'll have to wait."

"No problem, Doc. He's not in any danger, right?"

"I re-inflated his lung, and it looks to be a simple repair. He hasn't lost much blood, which is a positive sign."

"Thanks, Doc."

I stepped back into the room, and Nick let me know that we'd have an OR in fifteen minutes. I consulted with Ghost, and we decided we'd keep the patient in the ED until the OR was free.

"How bad?" I asked quietly.

"Ugly," he replied. "Just keep your head down. That's what I'm doing. The nurses are about to stage an armed rebellion."

"Never, ever piss off the nurses," I said. "Ever."

"Mike is very, very wise," Becky said, having moved closer to us.

"I saw quite a few people in the waiting room when I walked by," I observed.

"It's taking four or five hours before we can see walk-ins because we're short two doctors on this shift and three overall."

"I tried to take a chart this morning, but Ellie refused because I wasn't on the ED rotation. Cutter will have to do something."

"At least three Board members back Wernher, believing we're 'out of control' and that the nurses and Residents push the Attendings around."

"Not true, but the picture does become clearer."

"I assume you heard about Gale Turner."

I nodded, "I went to see him. I looked him in the eye and bluntly asked. He says it's fabricated, and given other things I've heard from reliable sources and things I've observed, I think he's telling the truth. It's all about forcing the clinic to close."

"The damage done will be incalculable," Ghost observed.

"I know," I replied. "But I'm not sure what we can do about it without funding, and you know that's a very sore point with the County Board and the voters. There is no appetite for raising taxes even to fund basic services."

"We're nearly all conservative Democrats here," Ghost observed. "We want fiscal responsibility, but we also believe the government should be doing more to ensure a true safety net exists. The problem is property taxes are extremely regressive and sales taxes are as well. But there is no appetite for a county income tax."

"People will be dumping tea in the river and waving the Gadsden flag if anyone proposes that."

"Which means we're stuck relying on charitable contributions to fund family planning services."

The orderly arrived with the gurney, and the team in the room moved the patient to it. Nick and I escorted the patient to the surgical ward, with Deputy Cullen following behind us.



# XI. All We Can Do Is Hope for the Best

## April 2, 1990, McKinley and Circleville, Ohio

"Mike, do you have a minute?" Kellie Martin asked late on Monday afternoon.

"I give two minutes for you and your gallant nursing crew."

"If you're quoting Kahn from *Star Trek*, I think we're in bigger trouble than just the ED!"

"That was actually Kruge, played by Christopher Lloyd in *The Search for Spock*," I replied with a grin. "The same actor who was Doc Brown in *Back to the Future*."

"Oops!"

In order to have some privacy, we went to a consultation room rather than the lounge, though, as always, when I was with a female staff member, I made sure the door was open. I'd trust Kellie with my life, but the last thing either of us needed was rumors.

"What's up?"

"What exactly did *Rupert Wernher* say to you?"

"Between you and me, right?"

Kellie smirked, "I'd sleep with you before I'd violate your confidence."

"Good to know," I chuckled. "So, zero chance, then, because I'm married."

"Exactly."

"He kicked me out of the ED and said if I wanted ED shifts, I'd have to shave, cut my hair, and wear blue scrubs. He had the temerity to suggest I leave the surgical staff and become an ED Resident."

"You're joking!"

"Nope."

"When that Charlie Foxtrot of a former officer was in the Navy, they were allowed beards! That changed in '84 when the idiot CNO, Admiral Watkins, decided sailors had to be clean-shaven. The propaganda circulated was that it was about breathing apparatus seals, but he was clear in his statements to Congress it was about 'sharpening' appearances."

"The Cincinnati Reds," I said. "Charlie Foxtrot?"

Kellie smirked, "Military jargon for 'cluster fuck'! Only officers can swear in front of officers, so enlisted use things like 'Charlie Foxtrot' and 'Whisky Tango Foxtrot'. I bet you can work that one out for yourself."

"What The Fuck?" I suggested with a grin. "And SNAFU conforms to the pattern."

"Yes! Anyway, your beard and ponytail are religious, right?"

"Yes. Why are you asking about Wernher?"

"Gathering information for a grievance. I just wanted to know what was actually said, but the grievance will be about kicking qualified doctors out of the ED over

a turf war, leaving us shorthanded. And don't worry, this is coming from the nurses' union, not any doctors or other staff."

"Does he use military terms when he's giving orders?" I asked. "He told me to 'shut the hatch' when I followed him into his office."

"He talks like a Navy lifer on a combat ship, but it's an affectation, given he was a doctor who served on land. And I'm sure you saw his fighter pilot 'I love me' wall instead of the usual medical certifications and patient pictures."

"Come to think of it, I did see the pictures of him in his naval uniform and shaking hands with people I have to assume are politicians, but I didn't look closely because that wall was behind me when I was in his office."

"One is with Richard Nixon, two are of the two Mayor Daleys of Chicago, and another is Senator Everett Dirksen from Illinois. I'm not sure of the others because I only had a brief glimpse."

"Who *is* this guy?" I asked.

"I did some checking with my contacts, and he was a run-of-the-mill Navy doctor, then an average internist before switching to emergency medicine. Nobody in Chicago liked him. Scuttlebutt is that they gave him glowing reviews to get rid of him. Perry knows him from medical school, but Wernher wasn't chief then and Perry was never assigned to him. Wernher apparently tried for the Chief's role at University of Chicago Hospital but was turned down."

"I know the doctor who is Chief there, so I'd say Doctor Wernher had zero chance. And I'm guessing he has a chip on his shoulder."

"Yep. Rumor has it that three members of the Board pushed for him to be hired because he promised to be a hard ass and crack down on the ED staff."

"How's that playing in Peoria?" I asked.

"About as well as *Our American Cousin* on April 14, 1865 at Ford's Theatre in DC."

"Other than that, Mrs. Lincoln, how was the play?" I smirked.

"You're a goofball, Mike!"

"Takes one to know one. When is the grievance going to be filed?"

"Probably Wednesday. Just keep your head down because he's going to try to take it off if you stick it up."

"I didn't *do* anything," I protested.

"It's mostly not you, it's him pissing on everything to mark his territory. Well, much to his chagrin, none of us are into water sports!"

"Also good to know," I chuckled.

"I know this will never happen, but get a hall pass from your wife, and I'll wipe that smirk off your face!"

"Says the woman who has the same opinion of cheaters I have."

"Obviously, but I like being irreverent, and you're a good sidekick for that, and so is Doctor Saunders."

"We do come as a matched set!"

"I need to get back. Do your best to stay out of the blast radius."



"Count on it!"

We left the consultation room, and Kellie returned to the ED. I checked my watch and went straight to the scrub room as it was time for Kenton's surgery. I scrubbed in and went into the OR just as he was being brought in by Nick and Penny.

"Hi, Kenton," I said. "It's Doctor Mike. How are you feeling?"

"Like I want to go to sleep."

"Good. I'll see you when you wake up, OK?"

"Yes."

"Light's out, Bob," Doctor Anniston said to the anesthesiologist.

"Good to go," Bob Allen said about three minutes later.

"All yours, Pete," Doctor Anniston said. "Your Resident is busy, so Mike will assist, and I'll supervise him."

Kenton's surgery was routine, and when we finished, I had Nick carry the resected small bowel to the pathology lab for immediate analysis, then went with Penny to take Kenton to recovery. I wasn't too worried about the pathology report, as the tumor had been completely contained in the intestine, though if it was malignant, Kenton would very likely have to undergo chemotherapy, though protocols were changing with regard to completely excised tumors, and not being an oncology specialist, I didn't keep up with the latest developments.

Just before 5:00pm, we had the results, and they were benign, which Pete Barton reported to Kenton's parents. I left the hospital and headed home, happy to be away from the unfolding confrontation. I realized that for the first time, I was happy to be away from the hospital, not because I was tired, but because I didn't want to be there. That bothered me tremendously, and it was something I'd discuss with Father Roman when I saw him.

When I arrived home, Kris and Rachel greeted me with hugs, and I confirmed it was OK to call Doctor Turner's attorney. Kris was accepting of the request, so I went to my study, with Rachel tagging along.

"Papa has to make a phone call," I said. "You can stay if you're very quiet."

My daughter made a perfect impression of her biological mom, giving me a look and putting her hands on her hips.

"I want to cuddle!" she said.

"And we can, so long as you're quiet. Otherwise, it will have to wait."

I sat down, and she scurried over and climbed into my lap. I picked up the phone and dialed the number for Walter Burch. He answered on the second ring.

"This is Doctor Mike Loucks calling," I said. "I understand you're representing Gale Turner?"

"That's correct, Doctor. Thank you for returning my call."

"How is Gale doing?"

"OK, given the circumstances. He's home with his wife and children."

"That's a good thing, for sure. How can I help?"

"First, how long have you known Doctor Turner?"

"A little over three years. I first met him in February of 1987 during a clinical rotation as a medical student."

"When did you become a doctor?"

"About ten months ago -- May 25, 1989."

"Have you worked with Doctor Turner as a physician?"

"Yes. I was assigned to one shift a week at the Free Clinic until the shootings at the hospital required my schedule to change."

"As an aside - were you there?"

"Yes. I was in the trauma room where Deputy Sommers was shot. I worked on her, but it was hopeless."

"At the clinic, did you ever see the treatment protocols violated or circumvented? I mean, any?"

"Never. Gale and Trina Carlstyle were both sticklers for always following protocol. That included a minor case where either Trina or I could have done the procedure, but because it called for a scalpel, she called Gale to do it. I treated several hundred patients over the years as a student and Intern, and never once was I alone with a female patient, and very rarely with a male patient."

"Were you aware of any complaints of any kind made at the clinic? Not just against Doctor Turner?"

"I had a few cases where the patient complained about reporting an active sexually transmitted disease to the County Health Department, but that was it. I did hear, long after the fact, that complaints had been lodged against Nurse Abby Norman, but she left the Free Clinic before I started."

"When did you hear about those?"

"From Detectives Tremaine and Kleist when they interviewed me. My friend, Doctor Clarissa Saunders, dated Abby for a time, and they were on a trip to Europe with my first wife and me and another couple. On that trip, I saw nothing that would indicate Abby was in any way inappropriate."

"Are you divorced, Doctor?"

"No. My wife died immediately after giving birth to our daughter just under three years ago."

"My condolences. I was asking because anything you might have said to her at the time it happened could corroborate your statements."

"I remarried, but one thing was as true with Elizaveta as is true with Kris, I keep my professional life separate from my private life as best I can. I suspect you do the same."

"I do. What do you know about the protestors outside the clinic?"

"Not much. That began after my assignment changed in February. Do you know anything about them? Gale suggested it's a setup."

"We can't find any specific ties to any church or organization, but the private investigator we hired has found individuals from the local Catholic church and at least two Protestant churches."

"Faith Bible is one of them, right?"

"I thought you didn't know anything about the protestors?"

"I don't. It was a logical conclusion based on my past interactions with them."

"Do you know either Father Walter Clifton or Pastor James McDougal?"

"I know Father Clifton, and I know Pastor McDougal by name. I can't imagine Father Clifton condoning perjury. I can't speak to the virtue of James McDougal given the interactions I've had with his congregation over the years."

"Are there any other doctors you can refer me to besides Doctor Saunders?"

"Paul Lincoln, Kylie Baxter, and Naveen Varma all had shifts in the past year. They're all assigned to the Emergency Department at Taft and had shifts at the Free Clinic the same as I did."

"OK. I'll reach out to them. I assume you'll testify on behalf of Gale Turner?"

"Absolutely. As will Doctor Saunders. And we'll both appear before the Medical Review Board, if necessary."

"Excellent. I'll be in touch. Thank you."

"You're welcome."

We said 'goodbye', and I ended the call.

"You were a very good girl, Rachel," I said.

"«Je t'aime papa!»" she giggled.

"On second thought," I chuckled.

I got up and carried Rachel with me to the kitchen.

"How did the call go?" Kris asked.

"Fine, I guess. The attorney was just gathering preliminary information."

*Beep! Beep! Beep!*

I looked at my pager.

"Eight 1s," I said. "That's a Level I Disaster Protocol. I have to go to the hospital."

"NO!" Rachel protested. "Papa cuddle and play guitar!"

"Sorry, young lady, but sick people need me."

I put my unhappy toddler on a chair, kissed her forehead, then kissed Kris.

"I'll call when I know something," I said. "Don't wait for me for dinner."

"OK," Kris agreed.

I grabbed my medical coat and bag, hurried from the house, got into my Mustang, and headed to the hospital, arriving about twelve minutes later. The first thing I noticed was that there were no cruisers in the parking lot and no

EMS squads in the ambulance bay. I found that very odd, given the first patients from a mass casualty incident should have arrived.

I parked, put on my medical coat, locked my car, and hurried into the ED via the waiting room. There were roughly a dozen people waiting, but no law enforcement and no medical students performing triage. Patty buzzed me through to the ED, and I saw several other Residents from the ED and Internal Medicine, along with Vince Taylor, a fellow surgeon, though he was PGY3.

Scanning, I saw Dutch Wernher with a stopwatch and a clipboard and suppressed a groan because I was positive this was a drill. I walked over to where Clarissa was standing with Antonio Gómez and Kylie Baxter.

"Drill?" I asked quietly.

"Yes," Kylie replied.

"Are patients being seen?"

"Slowly. We were short two physicians today, which I'm sure you know."

"Yep. Any idea how long this will take?"

"No clue."

About twenty-five minutes after I'd been paged and ten minutes after I'd walked into the ED, Doctor Wernher asked for everyone's attention.

"This was an assembly drill designed to test the notification system and gauge response times. I recorded when each of you arrived, as well as whether you followed protocol in wearing your medical coats and IDs. We'll conduct regular

drills at random times, and future drills may include simulated patients. That is all. You're dismissed."

There was general grumbling and complaining, but I kept my mouth shut and went to the consultation room to let Kris know I was on my way home. She said she'd have dinner waiting. I thanked her, ended the call, and left the building.

"He sure has a way of endearing himself to the team," Becky, who had followed me out, observed.

"I know these are necessary for a Level I Trauma Center," I said, "but you would think he'd get the lay of the land and not call a drill on his first day. But it fits the other changes."

"He's trying to be a hard ass, and he's succeeding, but he's also about to have a nurses' strike."

"What's the process?"

"A grievance which will be presented tomorrow, hopefully first thing. The hospital has forty-eight hours to respond. If the response is not sufficient, a notice of intent to strike will be filed. Then a vote of the members authorizes the strike, and the strike can commence fourteen days after the official notice was filed."

"What are you asking for?"

"Flexible breaks, which we always had; access to the lounge, which we always had; and a full complement of doctors, nurses, and medical students at all times. Our contract expires on June 30, so this will feed right into that."

"Will it come to a strike?"



"It all depends on how much backing Wernher has on the Hospital Board."

"Would it be all nurses or just the ED?"

"All. There's a master contract, though each service is covered by slightly different conditions to accommodate differences between, say, surgery and the ED. The ICU nurses will be given a waiver to work, and there will be one team of nurses available for critical emergency surgery. Otherwise, we all walk."

"That will basically close the hospital."

"The negotiations for our new contract haven't been going well, and this gives us a chance to force their hand because Roth, Baker, and Getty have already complained to Cutter about Wernher. I think Cutter was purposefully misled."

"To what end?"

"The Hospital Board is under extreme pressure from new County Board members to bring costs down significantly. They'll replace the Hospital Board members with members of their liking when terms expire. The new County Board members freaked out at the revised operating cost numbers for the new ED and new surgical wing. The capital costs are funded with bonds and charitable donations, so those are set, but taxes have to be raised to fund operations, or costs have to be cut. And you know where they're going to cut, right?"

"Nursing," I said with a sigh.

"Exactly. One of the things they're trying to take away in the contract is subsidized meals in the cafeteria for nurses. They're already taking it away from medical students as of June 1st."

"Oh, that's freaking brilliant! Most med students are already paupers! And nurses are underpaid!"

"Amen! Preach it, Brother Mike!"

I laughed, "If anyone ever said that in my church, I think the building would collapse!"

"I was raised Baptist, but I got better!"

I laughed again, "I can't disagree with that statement! I need to get back home."

"Me, too!"

We each got into our cars and headed to our respective homes. Rachel greeted me at the door, and I scooped her up.

"Sorry, Rachel," I said. "Papa is home now."

"Did you fix everyone?"

I debated explaining things to Rachel and thought better of it.

"Everyone that needed my help!"

"Papa is the best doctor!"

"Your chief fan!" Kris said, coming over to me for a kiss. "Dinner is on the table."

After we ate and cleaned up, the three of us went to the great room, and I played my guitar for Rachel, playing mostly her favorite songs. When we finished, we

said family prayers together, and I put Rachel to bed. Once my daughter was safely tucked in, I went back downstairs to be with Kris.

"Have you had a practice drill before?" Kris asked.

"This was the first," I replied. "I was just surprised Doctor Wernher called one on his first day, but he does things very differently. I spoke to Becky afterwards, and she says the nurses are filing a grievance against him over the changes, and they're considering a strike because the County is not offering proper terms for a new contract to take effect July 1st. The County Board is insisting on cost savings, and it's falling on the nurses, of course."

"Outrageous!" Kris declared. "I read about that in the paper with hospitals in New York City and other places. Nurses are terribly underpaid compared to doctors!"

"For Attendings, I'll agree with you, but Residents are not exactly paid princely salaries. We're fortunate here that our salaries are appropriate for the cost of living. That's not true in big cities like New York, Chicago, and Los Angeles. Sophia and Robby are going to have trouble in the Bay Area until he's working."

"We need a national healthcare plan funded by income taxes, with standardized pay based on cost of living!"

"Good luck selling that to the American public!" I declared. "Medicare and Medicaid are bureaucratic nightmares that often interfere with patient care."

"The error -- and it is not just in the US -- is funding *insurance* when what should be funded is healthcare. Eliminate all the bureaucracy!"

"Trotsky and Jefferson would be proud," I said, "but that still won't solve the problem because someone will have to ration care to ensure costs are kept in line

with tax collection. How do you control, for example, elective surgery? Can everyone have any procedure at any time? I'll give you a hint -- the answer is we couldn't collect enough taxes to do that. There would have to be *some* limits."

"But our taxes here are so low, and Reagan cut them dramatically."

"I read a statistic that the percentage of GDP collected by the government is relatively stable no matter what the highest marginal tax rate might be, because most taxes are collected from the middle class, as we've discussed.

"But the point is, Americans are not going to agree to massive tax increases on the middle class. That's why even our left isn't trying for nationalized healthcare. The typical proposal is 'single-payer', which is an insurance program similar to Medicare, and even that won't fly with the public.

"And, back to your comment about bureaucracy, you're just replacing one unaccountable bureaucracy with another."

"So, what then?" Kris asked. "Do nothing?"

"A system where major medical insurance is subsidized by the government with premiums based on income, including complete subsidies for the poor. For everything else, healthcare accounts to which the government and employers contribute. I'm sure there are flaws in that system, but I haven't spent a lot of time thinking about it. I have other concerns."

"The situation at the hospital?"

"Yes, and my wife and daughter; soon to be two daughters."

"Will you be OK with all girls if that happens? With no boy to carry on the family name?"

"If I were going to try to carry on a family name, it would be Borodin, not Loucks. You know I identify with that side of my family far more than my dad's side. And you know from our discussion of Rachel's name that it wasn't important. Nor was it important to me for you to change your name."

"What's going to happen with you and the Emergency Department?"

"In the long term, Dutch Wernher *has* to lose because Level I Trauma Centers have to have a qualified trauma surgeon in the ED at all times. And there is literally no way that Cutter or Roth are going to agree to have surgeons report to the ED Chief because surgeons always supervise surgeons. That's why the Medical Director is always a former surgeon. Could that change? Maybe, but it would create problems with training and with liability insurance. Imagine a new Resident surgeon being supervised by someone without any surgical training and having something go wrong."

"So what is all of this then?"

"Posturing. I strongly suspect he thinks he can win in the long run, and has designs on being Medical Director. It's improbable, but maybe his strategy is to endear himself to the Hospital Board and County Board by 'cracking down' and cutting costs through efficiency. The problem still lies with the tradition that surgeons supervise surgeons, and the Medical Director supervises everyone."

"Is that a law?"

"No, simply tradition, so far as I can tell. I'm absolutely positive there are medical directors out there who are not surgeons, I just don't know of any specific examples. All I'm doing now is keeping my head down and making sure I follow protocols in the ED to the letter. That actually interferes with training my students, but I was expressly told not to get into it with Doctor Wernher."

Fundamentally, I can't win on my own, so I have to let the Chiefs fight. It's like bishops fighting -- it's best to stay out of the blast radius until they settle it amongst themselves."

Kris laughed, "You're too funny! Think I could get a back rub?"

"You could."

"And gentle lovemaking after?"

"Whatever you need."

"I love you, Mike."

"I love you, Kris. Shall we go up to bed?"

"Yes."



## **April 3, 1990, McKinley, Ohio**

"I take it you heard?" Clarissa said when we met for coffee on Tuesday morning.

"Heard?"

"The Free Clinic is closing on Friday. The Kelsey Foundation pulled the funding."

"Fuck," I growled. "In addition to people losing access to healthcare, Trina, four nurses, and the receptionist all lose their jobs."

"That was the only clinic in the entire county that offered family planning services," Clarissa said. "It's Columbus, Rutherford, or Washington Courthouse now."

"I think I read that the one in Washington Courthouse closed last year because they lost their funding."

"I bet those picketers are happy."

"And I strongly suspect the charges against Gale Turner will be dropped," I said.

"Which will make it obvious it's a setup."

"Yes, and we'll know for sure when they offer Gale a sweetheart plea bargain. Mark my words, sometime in the next week, the Prosecutor will offer a single charge of misdemeanor battery or something like that with no jail time and six months probation.

"That is SO transparent!"

"Sure, the other option is to somehow coöpt the grand jury to return 'no bill', and then the County Prosecutor cries to the Press about how Gale Turner got away with it because the Grand Jury blew it. That would be best for Gale because 'no bill' means he can argue with the Medical Review Board that he didn't do it. A plea bargain could be a real problem."

"What if they offered expungement as part of the deal?"

"He'd still be admitting to inappropriately touching a patient, and you can be sure someone will file a complaint, or the Board could act on their own based on the conviction. That said, misdemeanors are not automatic suspensions or

revocations the way felonies can be. If I'm Walter Burch, I'd tell the prosecutor to pound sand."

"You don't think the girls will perjure themselves?"

"Getting on the stand and lying is not the same as making an accusation to the cops, and if even one of them recants, it's all over. And with four, you *know* there was a conspiracy, and those almost always break down because somebody rats or folds. Remember, they won because they forced the clinic to close. You know what comes next?"

"Protesting the hospital because we offer medically necessary abortions, and the standard is fairly vague."

"Because it has to be. I mean, an ectopic is a slam-dunk. An abortion before chemo or radiation therapy? You know the argument there."

"A stupid one, but a lot of people buy it," Clarissa said.

"Which is why the Orthodox Church leaves it to the mother to choose when one or the other, or both, would die without an abortion. Motherhood may be compared to martyrdom, but not literally!"

"You mean figuratively giving up your life to care for your children properly?"

"Yes. It's an expression of «agápē» love, similar to the idea of a husband loving his wife as Christ loved the church and giving himself up for her."

"I should know better, but I'm constantly amazed at your practical responses to very difficult questions, including abortion."



"As I've said, two thousand years of wisdom is valuable. Have you heard anything about last night?"

"Just general grumbling. I know it's required to be certified Level I, but we're still over a year away."

"That time is going to go fast. I wouldn't do it the way Wernher did, but it will have to happen."

"Did you hear anything?"

"For your ears only, the nurses' grievance will be filed today, and in forty-eight hours, a notice of intention to strike. It's bound up in their contract negotiations, which haven't been going well."

"Somebody needs to clue in the morons who run this county and this hospital that without nurses, the hospital can't function. And not just some nurses, a full complement."

"You're preaching to the choir!"

"I need to get back to work. Lunch?"

"Unless I have a consult."

I left the cafeteria and headed back to the surgical ward.

"Doctor Lindsay would like to see you, Mike," Carol said when I checked in at the nurses' station. "She's in the Residents' office."

"Thanks, Carol."

I went to the Residents' office, and Shelly waved me in, indicating I should shut the door.

"What's up?" I asked as I sat down across from her.

"Please tell me there is no truth to the rumor."

"What rumor?" I asked.

"Please don't play coy with me."

"Seriously. What rumor?"

"That you and Clarissa are negotiating with University of Chicago Hospital to transfer in June."

"Neither admitting nor denying the rumor, would you blame me given the attempt to destroy my Residency program?"

"Mike, please, please, please, do not act impulsively or do anything rash. Let Owen, Getty, and Baker fix this, please."

"And if they can't?" I asked. "Then what?"

Shelly sighed, "So it's true, then?"

"True or not, it wouldn't be rash or impulsive. If Wernher wins, my options are an emergency medicine Residency working for a doctor who is completely at odds with how I want to practice medicine or a pure surgical Residency, something I expressly chose not to do and am sure is not for me. Owen agrees."

"Is this posturing, or is this real?"

"In my shoes, wouldn't you consider all your options?"

"I would," Shelly admitted. "Please do not act precipitously."

"You know me better than that."

"Which is what has me concerned. *Russians don't take a dump, Son, without a plan.*"

I laughed at the *Red October* quote.

"That was a good line, and Admiral Painter wasn't wrong."

"Give us some time, Mike. Please. This is Shelly asking."

"I will take it under advisement."

Shelly sighed and nodded at the door. I got up, walked out, and headed to the lounge to wait to be called for a consult in the ED. Kylie had clearly 'leaked' the information to someone who had spread it, and I strongly suspected that would cause further grief for Dutch Wernher. If it didn't, then I might actually need to make the phone call.

A move like that would totally disrupt my life, along with that of my family, but I didn't see any alternatives if my Residency program was effectively dismantled. I wasn't sure how Kris would respond to that proposition, but I had no need to raise it with her at the moment. The best possible outcome would be that the revolt against Dutch Wernher led to a more rational approach to running the ED.

It wasn't that I would object to efficiency improvements if they improved patient care or at least didn't harm it. To me, the lounge restrictions were silly, and I didn't see how that improved efficiency or improved patient care, and it certainly

didn't help morale, either of doctors or nurses. I could also argue that denying medical students access to the lounge did interfere with medical training, as I often used the lounges as impromptu classrooms.

The nursing staff changes simply couldn't work. While pretty much any other service except surgery could use scheduled breaks, that was impossible in a busy emergency department unless you overstaffed, and nurses switched in the middle of traumas for their breaks. Neither of those made sense, either for finances or for patient care.

For my own situation, I considered if I was being selfish, and while that accusation might be laid at my feet, I had a contract which specified a specific training program. There were ways for those contracts to be canceled, but none of them applied, at least so far as I understood, because poor performance was a component of most of them. A program *could* be terminated, but that required approval from NRMP or a court order, neither of which were likely given the hospital wasn't in severe financial distress or under review for subpar patient care.

As I sat thinking, I recalled that I was scheduled to attend a trauma conference in Indianapolis the weekend of May 18-20, and I wondered if that was still on. I got up and used the phone to call the ED and see if Ghost was available. He was and could take a break, so he came up to surgery, and we went to the consultation room for privacy.

"Do you realize how stupid it is that you have to come up here?" I asked when we were in the consultation room with the door shut.

"Oh, I know, and I fear it's going to be even more stupid before it gets better. I have to ask you, and I will not repeat your answer to anyone -- are the rumors true?"

"That I called Doctor Barton to arrange to transfer my Residency? No. That I will use that as a last-resort option? Yes. I'm OK with the rumor spreading, though."

"Did you start it?"

"I didn't object to it starting. Have you heard anything about the trauma conference we're supposed to attend in May?"

"No, because I don't think Wernher has got that far yet. It's paid for, and we're past the point where they'll refund the money. There's no problem with Roth, right?"

"He signed off and hasn't said anything," I replied. "If he and the other Chiefs are successful, we'll be back to *status quo ante*. I don't plan to say anything, but I wondered if Wernher had."

"As I said, not yet, but I suspect only because so far he hasn't stumbled across it. I'll let you know. I assume you know the nurses filed a formal grievance this morning."

"I expected that. I heard the contract negotiations aren't going well, and Wernher took away benefits they've always had. Not a good move on his part."

"It'll all depend on what's in their contract. You can bet that will be in the new contract because otherwise, it might spread."

"What's your take on the lounge and the scheduled breaks?"

"The scheduled breaks *could* work for any other service. Not for the ED. I mean, is a nurse going to walk out of a trauma because it's her break?"

"Surgery, too. It's not predictable like nursing in a ward. Has someone pointed that out to Wernher?"

"Ellie did yesterday morning. He told her it's *her* problem to solve."

"Bull!" I protested.

"Yeah, I'm with you on that one. It *can't* work. As for the lounge, that was just petty. Do the nurses sometimes sit in there? Yes. Same with med students. Are they slacking? Never! But being able to relax between traumas is important."

"It's also used as an impromptu classroom -- we all talk to med students in there."

"That's a really good point. His hospital didn't do Preceptorships, and I get the impression that he's of the Old School where even Fourth Years mostly do scut."

"Wonderful. He's setting back ten years of progress."

"I need to get back; just keep your head down. If anyone asks about you and Chicago, I'll give my usual response about not listening to hospital gossip."

"Thanks."

Ghost left, and I returned to the lounge. It was a quiet morning, and I had lunch with Clarissa, Shelly, and Sophia. The afternoon was a little busier, but I only had two consults, neither of which required emergency surgery. At 5:00pm, I headed home for a quiet evening with Kris and Rachel.



## April 5, 1990, Circleville, Ohio

On Thursday, Jocelyn, Gene, and Timothy joined us for dinner, as did Clarissa and Tessa.

"How are things at the law firm, Jos?" I asked when we sat down to eat.

"Lawyer scut is research, motions, and briefs. In July, I'll be allowed to have a few of my own clients, though I'll be supervised by a partner, similar to your situation. How is the hospital?"

"Don't ask," I sighed. "This has been the week from Hell. The new Chief of Emergency Medicine is a hard ass who is upsetting the apple cart, and he appears to have some backing on the Board."

"How does that affect you?" Gene asked.

"He basically kicked me out of the ED. I sit in the surgical lounge and wait for consult calls, and it's been a relatively slow week."

"Can he do that?" Jocelyn asked.

"He thinks he can, and he took me off the rotation. The other main service Chiefs -- Surgery, Cardiology, and Internal Medicine all agree he's doing it wrong, but so far, he's being allowed to do it. The nurses are in open revolt, and at 5:00pm today, they served notice of a strike due to a material change in working conditions. Their contract expires at the end of June, and negotiations haven't been going well, so they're itching for a fight."

"What changed, if you can share?"

"He banned them from the lounge, along with med students, and also implemented scheduled breaks with are impossible in the ED. When the Charge Nurse objected on those grounds, he told her it was her problem to solve."

"Who is this moron?" Jocelyn asked.

"Ex-Navy, via Rush-Presbyterian in Chicago. Perry knows him from when he was a med student, but that was seven years ago, and Wernher wasn't Chief then. Word is that he tried for the Chief's role at University of Chicago Hospital and didn't get it."

"He was up against Doctor Barton?" Clarissa asked.

"Yes. No contest."

"So what's going to happen?" Gene asked.

"All we can do is wait and see and hope for the best."



## XII. Then I Think You Know the Way Forward

**April 6, 1990, McKinley, Ohio**

"Would you do something for us?" Kellie Martin asked late on Friday morning.

"What's that?"

"Go to Personnel and fill out a religious accommodation request for your beard and ponytail."

"I don't need one," I said.

"You would if you wanted to accept Wernher's offer of an emergency medicine Residency. All you have to do is say you're considering it, but he said you had to shave and cut your hair, and you can't do that."

"I'm going to guess that will help the nurses in some way?"

"It'll make his unofficial policy public and put him on the back foot. It'll be one more thing he changed unilaterally, which is the main complaint the nurses have. The policy manuals simply say our appearances need to be 'professional' and 'neat', which has always been interpreted as properly groomed; no political or offensive slogans on clothing or buttons; no revealing clothing; and proper hygiene. I don't see any downside, and neither does Becky because he made the offer. All you're doing is asking for an appropriate accommodation."

"That actually makes sense, though I'm concerned Owen Roth or Shelly Lindsay will hear about it and think I'm actually considering it."

"Doesn't that work in your favor? They don't want to lose you, and it would wreck the entire 'trauma surgery' plan. Combine that with the rumor that you and Clarissa Saunders are leaving for Chicago, and you'll light a fire under Baker and Roth, not to mention the Attendings in the ED."

"I'll go see Personnel -- well, I read the memo that it's 'Human Resources' now -- right away."

Kellie left, and I walked down the long corridor to the Administration wing and went into the Human Resources office, which didn't appear to have changed in any way except its name.

"Good morning, Doctor!" a very pretty young woman said. "I'm Cassidy. How may I help you?"

"Good morning, Cassidy. I need to request a religious accommodation for my beard and ponytail."

"There are no hospital policies against either, except that you have to keep them neat, so no accommodation is necessary."

"The new ED Chief, Doctor Wernher, expressly said that he requires his male doctors to be clean-shaven and to have their hair cut short. Because of changes, I'm considering his offer to switch to a pure emergency medicine Residency."

"Doctor Wernher can't make that rule."

"Well, then someone needs to explain it to him because he was adamant, and he's instructed all the ED Residents and Attendings to shave and get haircuts."

"One moment, please. Let me speak to Mrs. Cartwright."

She walked away from the counter and down a short hallway. About two minutes later, Mrs. Cartwright, the Personnel Director -- now the Human Resources Director -- came to the counter.

"Hi, Doctor Mike. Cassidy explained the situation. You do not need any accommodation. Doctor Wernher is new, so he may not be aware of our policy. No other Chief has said anything, have they?"

"No."

"Good. Then I'm sure it's a simple misunderstanding. I'll take care of it and let you know."

"Thank you. I appreciate it."

"Any time! If you need anything, please call Cassidy, and we'll take care of you!"

"Thanks again."

"Have a good day, Doctor."

"You, too."

I left the Human Resources office and returned to the surgical lounge. I found myself in a strange situation, wishing for a severe trauma that needed my attention. It seemed so wrong, but truth be told, I was bored out of my mind and had to seriously consider my options.

I was paged just before lunch and was perversely happy that a patient needed a chest tube and then emergency surgery to repair a punctured lung. I was permitted to scrub in and assist, and we finished just in time for the M & M

Conference. I'd been dreading it because it was a formal review of the events of February 20th and our patient care in the face of a violent attack.

I joined Clarissa, Shelly, Kylie, and Sophia and sat towards the back of the packed room. I was surprised to see Loretta brought into the auditorium in a wheelchair by Bobby and got up to greet her with a light hug before returning to my seat between Shelly and Clarissa.

Doctor Cutter took the podium, and after a brief intro, Bobby wheeled Loretta next to the podium and handed her the microphone. She recounted the basic events, and the response, including the armed security guards, and then asked for comments from the gathered doctors, nurses, and medical students.

As expected, there were several objections to having armed security, even off-duty police officers, in the ED. I shook my head when Dutch Wernher stood up to speak. He hadn't been in the ED that day, and he hadn't lived in the area a week and hardly knew anyone in the hospital except by name. He certainly had a *right* to speak, but a wise man would have kept his mouth shut and listened before addressing people he barely knew in a hospital he barely knew in a community he barely knew.

"I'm sure," he began, "that many of you don't lock your cars or lock your doors at home because you believe your community is safe, despite a gun battle in the ED and at least one previous incident where a doctor foolishly attempted to disarm a patient, and was fortunately rescued by an attentive Sheriff's Deputy."

"THAT IS NOT WHAT HAPPENED!" Ghost said vehemently, springing to his feet. "You weren't there, and you are mischaracterizing the events. Contrary to your claims, the Sheriff's Department wanted to award a commendation to that doctor for *preventing* a patient from drawing a firearm by using a wrist lock."

"Doctor Casper," Doctor Cutter said. "Thank you, but please wait your turn to speak."

Ghost shook his head, "Not when an interloper with zero experience here and zero knowledge makes false statements."

There was applause, most especially from the nurses.

"Your input is noted. Please have a seat, and you'll have a turn."

"As I was saying..." Doctor Wernher started.

"Sit down!" a gruff voice called out, likely Tim Baker, but I wasn't sure.

"Yes! Sit down!" Becky demanded.

Suddenly, there was a clamor from numerous voices, male and female, all saying, 'Sit down!'. I simply kept my mouth shut, as did Clarissa, Shelly, and Sophia, as there was plenty of support. I hit on a course of action that would absolutely put Wernher in his place, all the while not saying anything he could point to as insubordinate. I stood.

"Fellow doctors and nurses," I said, standing up. "Please."

The room quieted.

"Doctor Wernher is entitled to his opinion, and we should at least politely hear him out. When he's spoken, I'm sure plenty of you will respond politely and one at a time. I certainly will. Doctor Wernher?"

I sat down, and Shelly leaned over,

"Nicely played," she whispered.

"Slick," Clarissa whispered.

"Thank you, Doctor Loucks," he said.

"Dutch, he goes by Doctor Mike," Doctor Cutter corrected. "Please use the name he prefers."

"Zing!" Clarissa whispered.

"My apologies, Doctor Mike. As I was saying, my experience in Chicago is such that I understand the need to provide medical care in a safe, efficient manner. The current ED is not configured for safety, though in looking at the plans for the new ED, I see the ambulance bay doors are properly configured to require badges.

"Armed security is standard in Chicago emergency departments and does not interfere in any way with patient care. It's private security, unlike here, where it's provided by off-duty law enforcement officers. Please do not dismiss patient and staff safety so lightly. Other changes should be adopted, including badges with photos that are color-coded by role and badge access for every door."

He sat down, and I immediately stood up.

"First, I want to welcome Doctor Wernher to his first M & M at Moore Memorial in his first week as Chief of Emergency Medicine. I do agree with his proposal for photo IDs color-coded by role, but beyond that, the events of February 20th were an anomaly in our community.

"Cook County Hospital, according to doctors who have served there, sees more gunshot wounds most *days* than we see in a month. University of Chicago

Hospital, where I know the Chief, has fewer than Cook County, but still an order of magnitude more than we have. We don't have a gang problem, and our drug problems are limited, though growing.

"What that means is that we do have to take security seriously, but it has to be in proportion to the actual threat. And, to be honest, armed citizens are the norm here in Hayes County, unlike Chicago, where handguns are largely banned, even for self-defense at home.

"If you walk into the parking lot, you'll see pickups with gun racks owned by Attending physicians, senior nurses, and just about any other role you can imagine here at Moore Memorial. Take a ride over to Hayes County High, and you'll see the same thing. We, as physicians, need to respect our community, and if we want to bring about change, we need to educate the public on the risks associated with handguns, which in our community is mainly suicide, not homicide.

"So, yes, some response is in order, but a proportional one, not a disproportional one. I say this as a physician who saw a friend, Deputy Tracey Sommers, killed in cold blood before my eyes and who supported two of my colleagues who I count among my best friends, who were shot by the same assailant.

"Even having experienced that, armed security on the premises at all times is too much. The McKinley PD and the Hayes County Sheriff have committed to sending officers into the ED in response to incidents like the one that precipitated the events of the 20th. That, in my mind, is the proper proportional response."

I sat down, and the room erupted in cheers and applause.

"You skewered him good," Shelly whispered. "And he can't say a word about it!"

"Nice move, Petrovich," Clarissa whispered as Kayla Billings stood to speak. "First M & M; first week. You called him a «мудак» (*mudak*) without calling him a «мудак» (*mudak*)!" ("Asshole")

I nodded and listened to Kayla, who agreed with the ID proposal but rejected *all* armed security, including police, in the hospital. I knew that would never fly because none of the officers would willingly surrender their firearms to enter the ED, and the Police Chief and Sheriff would never agree.

Several others spoke, with Shelly going last, reinforcing my point, though she objected to badged access to the ED for medical staff coming for consults. I understood her point, but unless we redesigned the hospital completely, there was no way to allow medical staff badgeless entry if access controls were in place. We could achieve what she wanted with no controls on interior entrances but with them on the ambulance bay and the waiting room. I suspected that would be the end result.

Once Shelly had finished, Doctor Cutter reminded everyone that Psych was available to help with any aftereffects of the shooting incident, then dismissed everyone. Kellie Martin came over to me and pulled me aside.

"In the military, we would say 'Sir' with a certain tone of voice that conveyed we thought the officer was a total asshole but in a way that couldn't land us at Captain's Mast or given NJP! You did the same thing here!"

"NJP?"

"Non-judicial punishment. It's a form of discipline short of a Court Martial, with the benefit of not being a criminal conviction. Punishments basically range from a reprimand to thirty days in the brig. A sailor or Marine could refuse, and then the officer has to decide whether or not to convene a Court Martial."



"Ever get called to Captain's Mast?" I asked.

Kellie laughed, "Once. I may have mooned a bunch of recruits one day when I was on a speedboat while off duty."

"May have?" I asked.

"May have. That's my story, and I'm sticking to it!"

"Reprimand?"

"Yes, and the Commander who held Mast was doing his best not to laugh the entire time. Nothing went into my service record."

"What was the charge?"

"Conduct unbecoming. Officers are not supposed to act «некультурный» (*nekulturny*)!" she smirked. ("Uncultured")

I laughed, "Nice. I take it you learned that word from Clarissa?"

"No, actually, from a Russian defector who addressed a seminar I attended during Medical OCS -- Medical Officer Candidate School. I need to get back. But nicely done with Wernher."

"Thanks."

"Before I go, did you ask for your accommodation?"

"Yes, but no such thing exists because my beard and ponytail aren't against any policy. Mrs. Cartwright was going to explain that to Doctor Wernher."

"Which is exactly what I wanted to happen. He's now on record as trying to change the rules for nurses *and* doctors without the authority to do so."

"You are a subversive, Miss Martin!"

"Takes one to know one, Mr. Loucks!"

She winked and walked away, heading towards the ED, while I caught up with Shelly on the way back to the surgical ward.

"You buried him," she said.

"Thanks to the setup from Ghost," I replied. "And I'm sure Ghost will understand."

"Everyone in that auditorium who knows you understood exactly what you were doing. And it was perfect."

"Thanks."

"You and Kellie Martin seem to be close," Shelly said with a hint of innuendo in her voice.

"Not that way," I said. "We hit it off, sure, but neither of us is a cheater, as you and I discussed. She's very unhappy that an ex-Navy man is acting like a complete jerk."

"What was the Russian word Clarissa whispered to you."

"«мудак» (*mudak*). It means a-hole."

"He's either going to get his poop in one group quickly or be out on his butt."

"I wouldn't count on that," I said. "He has support from the Hospital Board of Directors and indirectly from several County Supervisors. The best approach, in my mind, is the one I took in the M & M -- find the common ground, act on it, and push back politely but firmly on the BS.

"The nurses chose flamethrowers; I chose rhetoric. Their way causes too much collateral damage, but I get it, given the County is being stingy with regard to paying them. I get that money is tight, but they can't take it out on the nurses without harming patient care. You and I both know we can make do missing doctors; what happens when we're missing nurses?"

"Nothing good."

"And losing candy strippers doesn't help, either," I observed.

"I did hear that the High School canceled the program after the County's liability insurer questioned kids under eighteen working in the hospital."

"Bureaucrats, whether in insurance companies or in government, are going to kill us all. Jefferson and Trotsky both warned about unaccountable bureaucrats and how they would betray their respective revolutions."

"Trotsky? Seriously?"

"Seriously. He had a lot of bad ideas, but being against bureaucrats wasn't one of them!"

As we walked into the surgical ward, my pager went off, showing three '999', indicating a consult in the ER, but not stat, which would have been six 9s. I walked to the lounge, found Nick, and the two of us made our way to the ED via the stairs. Ellie directed me to Exam 2, and we entered.

"Mike Loucks, Surgery," I announced.

"Hi, Mike," Naveen said. "Kristin Westbrook; sixteen; furuncle on her inner thigh, about 3cm below the inguinal groove; temp is 38.4°C; pulse 72; BP 110/70, PO<sub>2</sub> 99% on room air. First noticed about a week ago, now much larger despite warm compresses. Proposed treatment is lancing, topical antibiotics, and a course of oral antibiotics."

"Thanks, Naveen. Hi, Kristin. I'm Doctor Mike, a surgeon. How are you feeling?"

"Embarrassed!"

"I understand, but everyone in the room is a medical professional. How bad does it hurt?"

"It's pretty sore, and if I touch it, it really hurts."

"I'd like to examine you, please. I'll listen to your heart and lungs, then examine the boil. As Doctor Varma suggested, the usual treatment is a lance, that is, using the pointed end of a scalpel to puncture it. We'll drain it, wash it out with saline, and apply a topical antibiotic. Sounds good?"

"Do I get an anesthetic?"

"Honestly, a local would hurt more than lancing the boil. It'll just be like a pinprick. And the overall level of pain should go down once it's drained. May I examine you?"

"Yes."

I washed my hands, put on gloves, then had her sit up. I checked her heart and lungs, and finding nothing that would contraindicate the procedure, I had her lie down so I could examine the boil, which was about a centimetre below the elastic leg-opening of her panties. I saw no complications, and it was a simple furuncle -- infection of a hair follicle, colloquially called a 'boil'.

"Becky, I&D tray, please."

Becky brought me a tray with a scalpel, a medium bore needle on a syringe, an irrigation syringe, a bottle of saline, a basin, a bottle of alcohol, and gauze. I decided to try to limit scarring and use the needle rather than the scalpel.

"Needle aspiration," I said to Becky. "Kristin, I'm going to use the needle to remove the fluid, as that's less likely to leave a scar than the scalpel. First, I'll wipe the area with alcohol, then insert the needle. I'll use it to suck out the fluid, then rinse with saline and apply a topical antibiotic. OK?"

"Yes," she agreed.

Becky and I worked together to perform the procedure, and ten minutes later, Becky taped gauze in place.

"Keep this dry for twenty-four hours," I said. "Then make sure you wash it well every day. Keep it covered with gauze for a few days to prevent chafing. If it's uncomfortable, apply warm compresses and take Advil or Tylenol. OK?"

"Yes! It already feels better!"

"Naveen, oral antibiotics are contraindicated -- no carbuncle, no obvious skin disease."

"OK. Thanks, Mike."

"Anytime. Nicole, have a good day!"

"Thank you, Doctor!" she exclaimed.

I removed my gloves, tossed them into the bin, and left the exam room. Nick followed me from the room, and we headed back to the surgical ward.

"Can I ask a question?" he inquired.

"Sure."

"How would I explain that kind of thing to my wife? She'd have a fit if I touched a girl there."

"My wife, Elizaveta, was extremely uncomfortable with those kinds of procedures, especially Foley catheters, because you actually have to touch the woman's vulva to insert the catheter. All you can do is make it clear that medical procedures and intimate contact have zero to do with each other. As a doctor, it's just a body and just a medical procedure, period. That should have been drilled into your head by this point."

"It is. It's my wife's reaction."

"Be discrete and don't mention specific procedures. If it does come up, remind her that it's a medical procedure. How does she react to the co-ed locker rooms?"

"What she doesn't know can't hurt me!"

"You really do need to tell her because if she finds out later, there will be hell to pay. As for you, you simply need to turn off that part of your brain in every

medical context, including the locker room. If you can't, go into research because you can't be a doctor."

"You were touching a hot girl's inner thigh, and you didn't think about that?"

"Not for a second," I said. "I was serious when I insisted you need to turn off that part of your brain. If you can't do it, you aren't cut out to be a doctor because, at some point, you'll end up in serious trouble."

"I'm not sure how you just turn it off."

"You just do. Train yourself. Remind yourself you're a physician. I'm not kidding about this. Got it?"

"Got it."

He said it, but I wasn't sure I believed him. When he walked into the lounge, I went to see Shelly Lindsay.

"What's up?" she asked when I appeared at her door.

"I have a question I need to ask in complete confidence about a medical student."

"Come in and shut the door."

I did and sat down.

"Here's the problem," she said. "No matter what I promise, if you tell me something I decide indicates patients are at risk or is about illegal activity, I can't keep the promise. This isn't a confessional."

"Understood. Let's try it this way. If a Fourth Year, who has already Matched, indicates that he was thinking about sex while observing an intimate exam, what's the correct action to take?"

"That's a huge red flag for a Fourth Year. Have you observed any inappropriate behavior?"

"No. This was in the context of a question of how to explain procedures a wife might find objectionable. I know about that because Elizaveta nearly had kittens when she found out about inserting Foley catheters for young women. I talked her off the ledge, and you and I have discussed the co-ed locker room, which was also raised, but in the context of hiding it from his wife."

"Another red flag because that means he potentially sees it as sexual in an inappropriate way."

"I was thinking the same thing. What's the approach?"

"You counseled him?"

"Yes, and he acknowledged what I said, but his body language and tone of voice made me doubt whether he actually internalized what I said."

"What specialty?"

"That's going to give it away in a way that neither of us can maintain plausible deniability."

"You don't have a choice, Mike. You didn't come here because you needed scintillating conversation or to bask in the glow of my greatness!"

I laughed, "Goddess Shelly?"



"Bow down, worship me, and kiss my feet!"

"I'll leave that to your future husband," I chuckled. "I already have two women at home demanding that from me in different ways, and a third one will arrive shortly!"

Shelly laughed, "Little girls tend to wrap their dads around their little fingers."

"She's trying, that's for sure!"

"Who?"

"Nick Duran."

"He Matched for oncology at Good Samaritan in the Chicago suburbs, a specialty without a lot of intimate contact. That said, he's going to be a physician. The protocol for a doctor with that problem is a psych eval, counseling, and close monitoring."

"My concern is that he voiced it as a question of how to handle it."

"Just a question? Why are you here?"

"Because he called the patient a 'hot girl' and mentioned me touching her inner thigh."

"I don't see how we can avoid asking for a Psych eval. I mean, we *could* simply ignore it for another seven weeks, but if he's ever accused of inappropriate behavior and it becomes known we were aware of the risk and did nothing, we'd have liability. I'll speak to Owen, and he'll order the psych eval."

"That is unlikely to go over well," I said. "And it could very well cause students to not speak to me."

"Then tell me that you are one hundred percent unconcerned and you've decided it's unfounded."

"You know I can't."

"We can set it up so that none of it goes in his permanent record, so long as he completes the counseling I'm sure Psych will order. It'll be tight, but six weeks should be sufficient. Let us handle it, OK?"

"Yes."

My pager went off with '999999'.

"Stat ED consult," I said.

"Take Penny. Just say she needs the experience, and you can't take both. I'll go see Owen now."

"Will do."

I left the Residents' office and went to the lounge.

"ED consult," I said. "Your turn, Penny, given you haven't had a chance. Nick, confirm afternoon labs, please."

"Right away, Doctor Mike!" Nick agreed.

Penny and I left the lounge and hurried to the ED via the stairs.

"Why the stairs?" she asked.

"Partly exercise, partly to not occupy the elevators. I generally only used them when I escorted families as a med student or to transport a patient."

"What do I do?"

"Watch and learn," I replied. "Ask questions afterwards."

Ellie directed me to Trauma 1, where Ghost and Paul Lincoln were working on a patient.

"What do you have, Ghost?" I said.

"Connor Johnson; male, mid-30s, MVA, vitals in the tank due to hypovolemia. He needs a central line."

"Billie, central line kit to me, please," I said. "Mary, come stand by me, and I'll explain the procedure."

Billie got the kit, and Mary Anderson came to stand by me. I quickly inserted the central line, explaining each step to Mary as I performed it.

"Line is in," I announced.

Billie hooked up the rapid infuser and began running in blood, and the patient's vitals stabilized a bit, but he wasn't out of the woods.

"Hang out, Mike," Ghost said. "He's obviously surgical if we can stabilize him. Bleeders in his belly, most likely."

"Penny, call up and tell them we have an unstable ex-lap coming up right away. Ghost, pump in another two units, and I'll take him. He's sure as hell not going to get any better than he is now by lying here."

"Billie, two units on the rapid infuser," Ghost ordered. "Mary, get a gurney."

"I'd like Mary to scrub in," I said. "Can you see your way clear?"

"I'm already in Dutch up to my eyeballs, so why not?"

I couldn't help but laugh, and Billie laughed as well.

"You put Wernher in his place perfectly, Mike," Billie said.

"Doctor Roth and Doctor Lindsay are waiting on us," Penny announced.

Mary came in with the gurney, and as soon as the second unit of blood was in, the team moved the patient to the gurney, then Penny, Mary, and I rushed him from the trauma room.

"HOLD THAT ELEVATOR!" I called out as we hurried down the corridor.

As usual, everyone exited the elevator, and a nurse held the door open for us. Less than a minute later, we pushed the gurney into OR3.

"Mary, scrub in with us," I said. "I cleared it with Ghost."

"Yes!" she exclaimed.

We went to the locker room, where I removed my cross and ring, and Mary and Penny both removed necklaces and changed into clean scrubs. We left the locker

room and went to the scrub room, and three minutes later, we joined Owen Roth and Shelly Lindsay in the OR.

"Train wreck," Ken Bernard, the anesthesiologist, said. "Owen, get in, find the bleeders, get out. He's not going to last long otherwise."

"Thanks, Ken. Mike suction. Mary, retractors. Shelly, let's get this done."

The surgery was as close to 'meatball surgery' as anything I'd ever seen in the OR. Owen and Shelly were operating like 'Hawkeye' Pierce and 'BJ' Honeycutt, and less than ten minutes later, they'd tied off three bleeders, removed the patient's spleen, and had begun closing.

"How's he doing?" Owen asked.

"Hanging in there," Doctor Bernard said. "We needed him off this table an hour ago!"

"Mike, you and Mary go with him to recovery," Owen said. "Stay until he's stable, or you're relieved."

"Will do," I said.

Owen and Shelly completed the surgery, and the anesthesia was stopped. Mary and I scrubbed out and then came back to take the patient to recovery. Because of the time, I was going to be home late, so I asked Jane, a recovery nurse, to call the house and let Kris know I'd call when I could leave.

"Thanks, Doctor Mike," Mary said as we sat down next to Mr. Johnson. "Can I ask what might be an impertinent question?"

"Given I'm going to be your teacher starting June 1st, I'd say you're required to ask those questions."

"About that, with what Doctor Wernher is saying, how is it going to work?"

"The way Doctor Roth, Baker, and Getty want it to work. Just keep your head down."

"Why did you defend him in the M & M?"

"«Jūjutsu», " I replied. "Think about the position he's in now."

"He can't claim you're opposing him or being insubordinate."

"Exactly. Just let this play out, and everything should be OK."

"What about the rumor you and Doctor Saunders want to leave?"

"If the trauma surgery program were to be canceled, I'd have to consider that option."

"That would really, really suck."

"Yes, it would. I don't *think* that's going to happen, but I need to think about what I'll do if that were to happen."

"I don't get it," Mary said. "Why kill a great program?"

"At the root, it's really a turf war. I, and the program, are simply proxies for Doctor Wernher to have more control over the ED. And I understand that point -- once we move to the new ED, we'll be working towards Level I certification. That means the ED will need to be staffed with pediatricians, cardiologists, and

surgeons. The current plan is for all of them to be members of those respective services."

"Suddenly, it all makes sense!" Mary declared. "Not his methods, but why he's doing it. There will be a dozen or more doctors from other services assigned to the ED who don't report to him."

"Yes. Right now, there is exactly one person in that situation -- me. If he can win the battle and break the longstanding tradition that only surgeons supervise surgeons, he can win the war. If not, he's going to have to deal with staff who aren't his, per se."

"It's called 'matrix management'," Mary said. "It's very challenging because the employee has two bosses, and if they don't agree, the employee is caught in the middle. It can be a real nightmare if there are several levels of management before there is a common manager between the staff members."

"At least here," I replied, "the various service Chiefs report to the Medical Director," I observed. "I basically worked for Doctor Northrup and Doctor Gibbs, even though, officially, I was on Doctor Roth's service. It worked OK because they agreed on how things should work. The thing that surprises me is Doctor Cutter's role in this, but he's under pressure from the Hospital Administrator and both the Hospital Board and County Board over operating costs."

"Politics?" Mary asked.

"Something I swore I'd avoid like the plague, but that was a foolish notion because somebody has to raise the money for this public hospital, and guess who does that?"

"Politicians at all levels."

"Sadly," I replied. "Back to the patient -- please check Mr. Johnson's heart and lungs. You're listening for crackles in the lungs and murmurs or regurge in his heart. You also want to listen for bowel sounds."

Mary performed the assessment, and I verified her findings of normal sounds.

"We should put temporary splints on his left arm and left leg," I said. "We didn't have time earlier. I'll stay with the patient; go to the ED, and get two adult male temporary splints -- one posterior long arm and one posterior knee splint."

"Be right back."

She was gone about ten minutes, and when she returned, she, Nurse Camille, and I splinted the broken arm and leg. The patient would need an ortho consult, but that would have to wait until he was out of recovery. The question would be whether he went to the ICU or the CCU because he certainly wasn't going to a regular ward bed anytime soon.

At 7:00pm, Bob Hodges, a fellow PGY1, and his student Alan came to relieve us. Mary and I turned over the patient and left recovery. She returned to the ED, and I went to the locker room to change into my street clothes. Once I'd changed, I went to the lounge and called Kris to let her know I was on my way home and hoped for a quiet evening together, given the delay had meant we'd miss Compline and the Canon of Saint Lazarus at Saint Michael.





## April 7, 1990, Monastery of the Dormition of the Mother of God, Rives Junction, Michigan

"Father, bless!" I said when I walked into Father Roman's small office on Lazarus Saturday, having driven up after attending the Divine Liturgy at Saint Michael the Archangel.

I cupped my hands, he made the sign of the cross, and I kissed his hand, then we exchanged a typical Russian greeting.

"I see you have on your cassock," he observed.

"I have permission from His Grace to wear a standard black cassock here and at the prison. I also have leave to wear the *sticharion* when I'm assisting Protodeacon Ivan with the Typika at the prison. And, finally, His Grace asked me to teach Sunday School once a month, and I'll start in August."

"How is Kris?"

"She's fine; she simply didn't feel up to traveling."

"Understandable. And Rachel is well?"

"Yes, she is."

"Let's take a walk around the grounds and talk, if that's OK?"

"It is."

We left his office and began our walk.

"What's on your heart, Michael?"

"Things at the hospital are unsettled, and for the first time since I started medical school, I didn't want to be there."

"What happened?"

I explained everything that had happened with Doctor Wernher and how I felt about it.

"At the risk of feeding your ego, you handled that meeting with Doctor Wernher perfectly and made good use of your prayer rule. What you did at the...what did you call the assembly?"

"An M & M - a Morbidity and Mortality Conference. It's used to review any negative outcomes, but this time was about the shooting incident."

"What you did there was cynical, even if it had the desired outcome. You showed him up with false humility."

"I can't dispute that, nor that it felt good to do so."

"The problem, Michael, is not your actions but your heart. That's almost always the source of sin, which I'm sure you know."

"I do. And I reveled in my colleague approving my actions and even pointing out I had used false humility to show him up."

"Had you been motivated by love rather than animus, there would have been no problem."

"It always comes down to that, doesn't it?"

"Yes, it does. Any tool can be misused, and it is not the fault of the tool but of the person who is using it improperly. Remember, it's not that you were wrong in anything you said, just in your motivations. You felt...let's use 'picked on' rather than 'persecuted', and used your rhetorical skills to get even."

"I did. Not to defend the problematic thinking, but what I said needed to be communicated."

"This is always the challenge. Is 'the ends justify the means' valid thinking?"

"Generally not. I wasn't thinking that way, though. I felt my response was justified based on my analysis of the situation."

"I agree, Michael. The problem here is not what you said or did, but where your heart was. Do you think you can deceive yourself?"

"Yes, of course. I'm struggling with the need to do the right thing, even if my heart isn't completely right."

"That, my young friend, is the essence of the struggle to live the Christian life. We're very quick to try to find justification for our actions, and it's simple to deceive ourselves into thinking that because we did what was right, our motivations do not matter. Or, and I know you've experienced this, that what we did was wrong, but we excused the behavior in some way."

"My promiscuity while I was single and after I became a widower."

"Yes, but all of that has been confessed, and thus you shall have 'no further care'."

"I don't beat myself up about it, but I do use that as an object lesson in how easy it is to justify or excuse sin."

"Yes. I want you to contemplate how you might ensure your heart is right before you act."

"I know the answer, Father -- it's prayer, especially Hesychast prayer. The challenge is that my role is one where immediate, decisive, confident action is necessary for success. When I know the right thing to do, I do it immediately."

"And your motivation?"

"To provide my patients the utmost in medical care -- with God's help, I do everything possible to repair their injuries and save their lives."

"And that motivation so thoroughly permeates your spirit that you don't have to think about it, and nothing can deter it, correct?"

"Yes."

"That is what you need to do in every area of your life, Michael. Get your heart right first, so that when you encounter situations such as the one at the M & M Conference, you are acting in Christian love. In your one-on-one with the doctor, you stopped to pray. Did you do that at the conference?"

"No, I didn't."

"Then I think you know the way forward."

"I do."

# XIII. I believe it's called a 'Come to Jesus' meeting

## April 8, 1990, Palm Sunday, Circleville, Ohio

"How did things go with Father Roman?" Kris asked when I arrived home on Sunday afternoon.

"I very much enjoyed the Palm Sunday services at the monastery," I replied, "but I took my usual beating on Saturday from Father Roman."

Kris laughed softly, "The only reason to visit a «старец» (*staretz*) is for a spiritual beating! If we didn't need the beating, we wouldn't visit the holy monk!"

("Elder")

"I tend to need more beatings than most!"

"I disagree -- you're simply more aware of your interior life than most people. And you take the commands in the Beatitudes and David's Psalm as seriously as anyone I know."

"And I have many failings to discuss with Father Roman."

"One area where you absolutely have not failed is your devotion to Rachel, nor in your commitment to me."

"Failing in either of those areas would create my own personal Hell."

"What about a personal heaven?" Kris asked with a twinkle in her eye. "It would be the last time because of Holy Week."

"What did you have in mind?" I asked with a grin.

Kris winked and carefully moved from the couch to the floor and ran her finger over my flaccid shaft. Her intention became exceedingly clear when she unzipped my slacks.

"What if Rachel wakes up from her nap and comes downstairs?" I asked as Kris unbuttoned the button of my slacks

"Then she'll see just how much Mama loves Papa!" Kris said lightly.

"I'm not sure our toddler needs to see that to know how much we love each other!"

"I can stop," Kris said, reaching into my briefs to grasp me.

"No," I whispered. "Don't stop."

Fifteen minutes later, after a very sexy blowjob, my wife tucked me back into my briefs, having had no interruption from our daughter. Kris moved to my lap, and we exchanged a soft French kiss. When we broke the kiss, she snuggled close and rested her head on my shoulder.

"You don't have to do that," I said.

"Of course not, but I want to," she replied. "I do it because I love you, because I know it feels good, and because I enjoy doing it. I can't imagine it's not similar to you enjoying using your mouth on my «minou». You've told me many times how much you enjoy it and like how I taste."

"I have," I admitted.

"And you have no qualms using your tongue even after we have made love, nor any about kissing me after I've sucked you."

"You know I will do anything you ask."

"And I will do anything you ask. Our bodies belong to each other and are, among other things, for giving pleasure to each other."

"And babies!" I declared, running my hand lightly over Kris' baby belly.

"And babies!" Kris agreed happily.

"Papa!" Rachel exclaimed, carefully coming down the stairs.

"Hi, Rachel!" I said. "Come sit with Mama and Papa!"

She came over, and Kris and I shifted a bit so that Rachel could join us despite my wife's ever-growing baby belly.

"What did you do while Papa was at the monastery?" I asked.

"The store, played with Abi, played with «Tante» Lyuda, and church. Papa play guitar?"

"Papa can play guitar if it's OK with Mama."

"Mama?" Rachel asked.

"Yes," Kris replied. "Let's get you a snack; Papa can change clothes and then play his guitar."

Kris got up from my lap and took Rachel to the kitchen. I zipped my slacks, then got up and went upstairs to change. Ten minutes later, all three of us were back in the great room, and I had my guitar. After playing for about an hour, we had dinner, then headed to Saint Michael for the first Bridegroom Service.



## **April 9, 1990, McKinley, Ohio**

Doctor Roth asked to see me as soon as I arrived at the hospital on Monday morning.

"I've heard some disturbing things," he said.

"About?" I asked.

"You," Doctor Roth replied. "I've heard you and Doctor Saunders are planning to leave for Residencies in Chicago. But I also heard that you asked about switching to a pure emergency medicine Residency here."

"Do you trust the nurses?"

"Yes, of course, but what does that have to do with those rumors? Well, the second one isn't a rumor, per se, because I heard it straight from Mrs. Cartwright."

"I can't help it if rumors are spreading, and did Mrs. Cartwright tell you the context?"

"No."

I smiled, "Context is everything, Owen."



"You're not answering me any more directly than you answered Shelly. You're usually forthright, and you aren't now, which is giving me heartburn. And not just me -- Ron Getty, Carl Strong, Tim Baker, and others."

"All I can say is I didn't start the rumors and that Mrs. Cartwright appears to have left out key context. I'll ask you the same question I asked Shelly -- in my position, what would you do?"

"And I suppose the answer I have to give is the same one she did - please do not act precipitously."

"You know that's not me."

"And that's what has me concerned. Things will work out here, Mike."

"Can you actually guarantee that? You and I both know I'm not cut out to be a pure surgeon, and I'm also constitutionally incapable of simply sitting around for hours at a time when I could be treating patients. For better or worse, I'm wired for emergency medicine, and this last week has been pure torture. Not to mention it basically violates my Residency contract."

"So you *are* considering leaving here," Doctor Roth said. "Violation of your contract is the one way you can leave on your own with no recriminations and no black marks."

"I'm considering all options," I replied.

"Please don't make any final decisions until we have time to work on this."

"As I said, I'm considering all options, and I won't act without due consideration."

"I suppose that's all I can ask at this point. Would putting you on a regular surgical rotation and splitting ED consults amongst the other Residents help?"

"Somewhat, but at what expense? Upsetting the rest of the team? Creating more dissension in the ranks?"

"Give me a day or two to discuss this with Bob, Nelson, Vince, and Shelly. OK?"

"Yes, of course."

"Thanks, Mike. You know this is not what any of us wanted."

"Well, *somebody* wants it, or it would have already been undone, and we wouldn't be facing a strike by the nurses because their working conditions were unilaterally changed without consultation as required by their contract."

"The Hospital will get an injunction against what amounts to a wildcat strike."

"Oh, brilliant," I sighed, shaking my head. "Forcing nurses to work against their will is not conducive to good patient care. And that will make them even more steadfast in their demands for their new contract. It's a war the hospital cannot win in the long run, and one in which the patients are the collateral damage."

"I didn't say I agreed; I simply noted what would happen; it's happened in other hospitals around the country. I'm sorry to cut this short, but I need to prep for surgery."

"I understand."

I left his office and went to the lounge to wait for an ED consult. It was nearly 8:00am before I was paged. I found Nick, who was in a sour mood, which I

suspected was a result of my conversation with Shelly on Friday. If he raised the topic, I'd discuss it with him, but I wasn't going to ask.

"Mike Loucks, surgery," I announced as I walked into Trauma 3 with Nick in tow.

"Morning, Mike;" Kayla Billings said. "Larry Peters; fifty-one; suspected cardiac tamponade; BP 80/50l; tachy at 120; shortness of breath; PO<sub>2</sub> 92% on five litres by mask; patient is suffering from acute kidney failure and awaiting transplant."

"Good morning, Mr. Peters," I said. "I'm Doctor Mike, a surgeon. I'd like to examine you, please."

"Sure, Doc," came the muffled response.

I first checked his neck and found distended jugular veins, and when I listened to his heart, I heard muffled sounds. Those two signs, in addition to hypotension, were called Beck's triad and were strong indicators of tamponade.

"Nick, I need an ultrasound so I can confirm, please."

Nick left, and suddenly, the monitor changed.

"No pulse!" Kayla declared. "Electrical activity indicates PEA!"

"That's definitive, and he can't wait," I declared. "Wendy, cardiac needle with a lead and an alligator clip to me, please."

She moved quickly, and I performed a blind pericardiocentesis and filled the syringe, and the patient's pulse returned.

"He's going to need a catheter," I said. "There's still fluid in his pericardium. We need to get him on dialysis."

I inserted the catheter with Kayla's assistance, and the patient's blood pressure came up ten points, and his pulse slowed to 102. That meant he was stable enough for emergency dialysis, and Kayla had her student make those arrangements.

"Thanks for the assist, Mike," Kayla said.

"You're welcome."

I left the trauma room, and Ellie stopped me.

"Doctor Wernher would like to speak to you," she said quietly. "He's in his office."

I nodded and turned to Nick, "Head back upstairs."

He acknowledged me, and I went to Doctor Wernher's office, stopping at the open door and knocking on it.

"You wanted to see me?" I said when he looked up.

"Come in, Doctor, and have a seat."

I walked in, closed the door, and sat down. Just like the first time, I waited for him to speak and nearly laughed when nothing was said for the first thirty seconds. I simply continued to look him in the eye and silently prayed the Jesus Prayer. He didn't let it go as long this time, speaking after about forty seconds.

"You've managed to turn the tables on me several times now. Friday afternoon was a nice judo move."

"Something for which I was taken to task by my spiritual advisor."

"Whatever for? It was calm, cool, rational, direct, and effective."

"Before I answer, how much do you know about me, Doctor?"

"I read your clinical evaluations and your medical school transcript. Why?"

"May I speak freely?"

"Go ahead."

"If all you know about me is from my evaluations and my transcript, you have a *very* incomplete and very inaccurate picture of me. Do you know which church I attend?"

"I don't give a tinker's damn about which church you attend! It's not particularly relevant to anything other than you possibly needing Holy Days off, if they can be accommodated."

"On the contrary," I countered. "I'm sure you heard from Mrs. Cartwright."

"Yes. Another area you outmaneuvered me, though that does raise a question."

"Yes, it does. But more importantly, is that my beard and ponytail are religious and are the sign of a clergyman."

"You're clergy?"

"If you didn't know that, at least in a general way, then please explain why you think you can understand me at even the most basic level?"

"I don't *need* to understand you. I need to know if you're a good doctor. Anything outside the hospital is your business and completely irrelevant to your work here."

"May I speak bluntly? And I do mean bluntly."

"Go ahead."

"You showed up and, without having done even the most basic homework, picked a fight with me. That's foolish in the extreme, no matter who you are or who I am. It's akin to showing up on a combat ship and picking a fight with a Chief who has been on that ship for the previous five years. That's Captain Queeg territory, Doctor. What's next? An investigation of missing strawberries from the lounge refrigerator?"

"You're out of line, Doctor!" Doctor Wernher growled.

"Not as far out of line as you are, Doctor. I am absolutely positive I know your goal, and you went about it completely the wrong way. In fact, you went about it in a way that will ensure failure. A different approach was called for, and, to be frank, can still work."

"Explain to me how a PGY1 thinks he knows my goals, please."

"First, I checked on your background -- "UC Berkeley; Emory Medical School; Residency as a commissioned officer in the US Navy at Bethesda Naval Hospital, then two years at Cam Ranh Bay in Vietnam; hired at Rush-Presbyterian in Chicago as an Attending in Internal Medicine; switched to emergency medicine in 1972; married, with three daughters. «N'est-ce pas?»"

"You did your homework," Doctor Wernher said. "Why French?"

"You would know if you had done *your* homework. May I continue?"

"Yes."

"In just over a year, we'll be in the new ED and working towards Level I certification. That requires staffing the ED with specialists beyond emergency medicine. You want all of those other specialists to be on your staff, not on their respective services. You picked the fight with me to force the issue now, rather than wait, on the theory that if you could move me to your service, you could claim *all* the specialists and thus avoid the potential problems of matrix management. How'd I do?"

"That is the gist of it," Doctor Wernher agreed.

"Don't you think, Doctor, that learning about me and enlisting me as an ally might have been a much better plan?"

"You were a vocal supporter of Doctor Gibbs."

"And I'll never cease to be, but I also know she's not able to return to duty at this point, and it could be months, maybe even a year or two, before she'll be cleared. I'm not irrational or impractical, Doctor."

"Spit it out, Doctor. What is it you want?"

"To be a forceful advocate for my patients and provide the best care I am able to provide."

"Besides the textbook answer?"

"I *live* the textbook answer, Doctor; something you would know if you had taken even ten minutes to talk to Ghost or Isabella in the ED, or Carl Strong, Shelly Lindsay, or Clarissa Saunders. Anyone here could have pointed you to them."

"Fine, you live the textbook answer. Now, what is it you want?"

"Restore things to the *status quo ante*, treat the nurses with respect, and we work together to make this the best Level I trauma center in the state. You might even achieve your ultimate goal of being Medical Director in the process. If you continue on your current path, I don't see that ever happening."

"I'll look weak if I do that."

"Fine, so look weak. Big deal! That will not matter in the long run. Handled correctly, you'll come out smelling like a rose. Confession is, as they say, good for the soul."

"So, what is your story?"

"I'm not the one to tell you. Call Loretta Gibbs and ask her. And while you're at it, ask her about everyone else in the ED. We are far more than our performance reviews and evaluations."

"You have balls, that's for sure."

"I don't see how anyone can work in emergency medicine without them. There isn't a single shrinking violet out there. If you meant confronting you, well, you should have expected that, but again, you didn't do your homework. Anyway, put me back on the ED schedule, take the 'Officers Club' sign off the lounge, and let's work together rather than fight. So, how about it?"



"How do I know you aren't going to try to undermine me?"

"You don't. The only way to know that is to earn each other's trust. You don't trust me; I don't trust you. There, it's out in the open. Now, we can try to fix it, or this entire thing can spiral out of control, and we'll be lucky to get out of it alive."

"*Red October?*"

"Yes. I'm half Russian, and I *always* have a plan. I'm also half Dutch, so it's always logical and methodical. Call Loretta and go see her today. She's home, and her PT is right before lunch. Once you speak to her, I think you'll have a much better picture. It's what you should have done in the first place."

"You've made your point, Doctor."

"Then, if I'm dismissed, I'll go back up to the surgical lounge."

"Dismissed."

I got up, opened the door, then walked out. As I was leaving the ED, Kellie followed.

"It's my break," she said. "What was that about?"

"I believe it's called a 'Come to Jesus' meeting."

"He doubled down?"

"No, I invited him to come to Jesus or experience hell. His call."

"And his response?"

"Call me if he signs out for a few hours for a meeting, please."

"Will do. Not going to give me a clue?"

"Not at this time. Just let me know if he leaves for a few hours, OK?"

"Will do. Have coffee with me?"

"Sure."

I joined her in the cafeteria, where I paid for both our coffees.

"How are things going otherwise?" I asked.

"I started seeing John, the lieutenant from Station 3."

I chuckled, "John Gage always struck out with nurses on *Emergency*. But all kidding aside, I hope it works out."

"He spent six years as a damage control specialist on the *Enterprise* before he joined the fire department about ten years ago."

"Think they'll ever let women serve on combat ships?"

"It'll happen, and probably in the next five years. Carriers are big enough to accommodate segregated female quarters. Other ships are more difficult, and subs are nigh on impossible, though you might make it work with boomers. Of course, in order to do that, Congress will have to repeal *10 USC 6015*, which bans women in combat billets."

"I take it you'd have asked for sea duty?"

"In a heartbeat! I wanted to serve on a carrier, but the boys put up the 'No girls allowed' signs for their dumb club!"

I chuckled, "*Calvin and Hobbes?*"

"Yep!"

We finished our coffee quickly because Kellie had to return to the ED, and I headed up to the surgical lounge. I picked up a surgical journal, but my mind was really on the conversation with Doctor Wernher. I'd been blunt and impertinent, but I felt my heart had been in the right place because my goal really was to make peace, not just between him and me, but with the doctors and nurses who worked in the ED.

The thing I simply didn't understand was why he had taken the approach he had. It made no sense, and I couldn't imagine at least getting the lay of the land before trying to make wholesale changes. Moving his office made sense, given he was expected to be hands-on, unlike Northrup, who had mostly taken a «laissez-faire» approach to running the service while he focused on the construction of the new ED, which was taking shape, and would come into service in about a year.

My thoughts were interrupted by Carl Strong coming into the lounge.

"Got a sec, Mike?" he asked.

"Sure. What's up?"

"Privately, please?"

I nodded, got up, and we went to the consultation room.

"I know it's not your style," he said. "But be patient and don't do anything rash."

"I may be impatient, but I am not impetuous," I replied. "I assume you've heard the rumor?"

"I think everyone has. Is there any truth to it?"

"I'll tell you the same thing I told Shelly and Owen - given the situation, I am keeping all my options open. I am not cut out to be a pure surgeon, and I've spent most of the last six days in the hospital sitting on my butt, waiting for consults. All my ED shifts were canceled."

"I'm aware. As I said, please be patient."

"I'll ask you the same question I've asked Owen Roth and Shelly Lindsay -- what would you do in my position?"

"I hear you, Mike. Wasn't your primary goal to serve your community?"

"Yes, and if things stay the way they are, that won't be possible. I can't even ask for one day a week at the Free Clinic because it closed as of Friday."

"A travesty."

"Worse; Gale Turner is innocent."

"Is that how you feel or what you know?"

"Both. I was sure it was BS, and once I learned a few more facts and spoke to Gale and his attorney, I'm positive the accusations are false. I'll bet you anything you care to wager, the County Prosecutor offers a plea deal for misdemeanor

battery or some similar BS charge. And it's possible they'll dismiss the charges completely if Gale refuses the plea bargain."

"What makes you say that?"

"It's one thing to tell fibs to the cops; it's another thing to get on the stand and perjure yourself. One of the four will crack or recant, and the case will fall apart. It was all about getting the Kelsey Foundation to pull their funding. That's what the protestors wanted, and magically, claims are made against Doctor Turner that caused that to happen."

"Son of a..."

"Yeah. So, here I am, twiddling my thumbs, waiting for my pager to go off. That is not what I signed up for, and having no ED shifts is a violation of my Residency contract."

"The escape clause."

"Yes."

"Please don't exercise that."

"As I said, I'm keeping all my options open. I have not made any decisions as yet."

"Talk to me before you do, please."

I smiled, "I'll add you to the list."

He left, and I returned to the lounge and wasn't paged until 11:10am for a rule-out appy, which caused me to miss my lunch, but which resulted in me performing my second appendectomy under the watchful eye of Bob Anniston.

"Textbook," he said. "Good job, Mike."

"Thanks."

"Take your patient to Recovery, then get some lunch."

I did as instructed and had Penny sit with the patient while I ate lunch. When I finished lunch, I returned to the recovery ward and, about thirty minutes later, escorted the patient to a semi-private room in the surgical ward. I wrote out the necessary orders, then returned to the lounge.

At 2:10pm, Kellie called to let me know that Doctor Wernher had left the building, and I hoped it was to see Doctor Gibbs. I had two more consults in the ED, but both resulted in admissions for scheduled, rather than emergency, surgery. At 5:00pm, I headed home for dinner, and after dinner, we attended the second Bridegroom Matins service of Holy Week.



## **April 10, 1990, McKinley, Ohio**

"Why did Tim Baker ask if I had accepted a Residency in Chicago?" Clarissa inquired when we met for coffee mid-morning on Tuesday.

"What did you say?" I asked.

"That I hadn't spoken to anyone in Chicago. He asked if you had, and I said that was a question he'd have to ask you. What's going on?"

"Someone started the rumor that I've arranged a transfer to University of Chicago Hospital for both of us. I saw no reason to deny it, but I also haven't admitted it. I simply say that I'm keeping my options open because the hospital violated my Residency contract."

"Is that actually true?"

"It all depends on how you read it, but I *could* make the case that being kicked out of the ED means I won't be able to take the emergency medicine boards. Let's just say that nobody has pushed back when I mentioned that, so I think at least the doctors agree. And in the end, if Chicago did sign us to contracts, there isn't really anything Moore could do about that."

"But it's not real, is it?"

"Yes and no. What are my options? Pure surgery? We both know I'm not cut out for that. That would mean switching to a pure emergency medicine Residency. I *could* do that, but it could come at the expense of patient care. Think about the difference in response times in the ED now compared to the past.

"My other option is to find another program with an opening, but what are the chances of that? You know Doctor Barton would move heaven and earth to create positions for both of us. We'd be going someplace where we were wanted and could do what we're both cut out to do. Yes, it would be disruptive, and I haven't even mentioned it to Kris, but it is an option, even if it's the last resort. Oh, and I could probably finally meet Steve Adams!"

Clarissa laughed, "I think the universe might collapse into a singularity if that ever happened! Your orbits have crossed any number of times, but an actual meeting? I have to be there, Petrovich! Back to the topic at hand, what's next?"

"I confronted Wernher yesterday and read him off."

"I cannot leave you unattended for five seconds without you finding a way to get into trouble!"

"While that's true, in this case, I did it in a way that can't get me into trouble. I called him out for acting precipitously and without any information. The only thing he knows about me is from my evaluations for my clinical rotations and transcript. I challenged him to talk to Loretta about me and others in the ED, and I think he might have done that yesterday. I also told him that he was being a moron in picking an unnecessary fight with the nurses, though I didn't use that word."

"And you don't think he'll use it against you?"

"He could certainly try," I replied. "But I pointed out he needed me as an ally if he wanted to achieve his goals."

"Wait?! Ally?!"

"What is my goal, Lissa? My *only* goal as a physician?"

"To provide the best possible care, everything else be damned -- politics, money, titles, or rules."

"Yes, and if that means finding a way to work with Doctor Wernher, I'll do it. I know what *he* wants; he knows what *I* want. If he wants to achieve what he wants, he has to give me what I want."

"What does he want?"



"At the root, it's really a turf war, right? Well, I, and the trauma surgery program, are simply proxies for Doctor Wernher to have more control over the ED. Once we move to the new ED, we'll be working towards Level I certification, which calls for the ED to be staffed with pediatricians, cardiologists, and surgeons.

"The current plan is for all of them to be members of those respective services. There will be a dozen or more doctors from other services assigned to the ED who don't report to him. Right now, there is exactly one person in that situation -- me. If he can win the battle and break the longstanding tradition that only surgeons supervise surgeons, he can win the war. If not, he's going to have to deal with staff who aren't his, per se."

"Suddenly, it all makes sense!"

"That's what Mary Anderson said when I spoke with her after she expressed a concern about the program. It's also the case that Wernher wants to achieve what Northrup couldn't -- to be Medical Director."

"And you'd help him?"

"I would do what was best for overall patient care," I replied. "That means finding a *modus vivendi* with Doctor Wernher and finding areas where we agree. I called him out on that plan and pointed out that what he's doing now will make it impossible to achieve his goals. I proposed he restore things to the *status quo ante*, that he treat the nurses with respect, and that we work together to make this the best Level I trauma center in the state."

"I can't see him backing down."

"He said it would make him look weak, and my response was, 'Big deal!' and pointed out that it wouldn't matter in the long run because if he handled it correctly, he'd come out smelling like a rose. That's when he asked for my story. I

declined on the grounds I shouldn't be the one to tell him and referred him to Loretta."

"And you'll talk the nurses out of striking?"

"I'm sure I could offer Ellie something to change her mind," I smirked.

Clarissa laughed, "She'd take a pay *cut* to get that!"

"If Wernher rescinds the changes, that will resolve the grievance and end the immediate strike threat. Only the Hospital Board and County Board can head off the strike coming in July. The problem is, the money has to come from somewhere. And it won't surprise you that Kylie mentioned they've seen an uptick in patients presenting who would normally have gone to the Free Clinic."

"Have you heard anything more?"

"No. I suspect the next thing we'll hear is about a plea bargain or the charges being dropped."

"I need to get back. Hang in there, Petrovich."

"I did get to do an appy myself yesterday, so there is that. But sitting around waiting sucks."

"I hear you."

We hugged, and Clarissa headed back to Medicine while I returned to the surgical lounge. About fifteen minutes later, I was called for a consult, and together with Doctor Vanderberg from neuro, admitted a patient with a large cyst pressing on his spinal cord. Unfortunately, because it was neurosurgery, there wasn't space in the OR for me to even observe, so I had lunch with Sophia.

In just over six weeks, she and Robbie would move to California. I was really going to miss them, both as friends and as our emcees for Code Blue. José and I would take over those duties, but it just wouldn't be the same. We had briefly discussed trying to find replacements, but none of us knew anyone with whom we'd felt comfortable enough to offer the role.

After lunch, I had three consults and wasn't able to scrub in on any of the surgeries because I had to be available for consults. At 4:45pm, Ellie called and said Doctor Wernher wanted to see me. I let Carol know I'd be in the ED, then went downstairs.

"Doctor Mike, reporting as ordered," I said from the door to his office.

"Come in, Doctor."

I shut the door and sat down, and this time, he didn't play the 'silence' card.

"I had a very interesting conversation with Doctor Gibbs," he said.

I was tempted to remind him he should have done that *first* but felt I should give him whatever 'win' he wanted to claim, so I decided to give a non-committal answer.

"OK," I replied.

"First, I have a serious concern about your testimony against a fellow physician before the Ohio Medical Licensing Board."

"May I suggest you read the transcript and then speak to Doctor Fran Mercer, a clinical psychologist? I'll sign the release so she can discuss the entire case with you. The psychiatrist in question literally ignored medical protocol and admitted

as much when he accepted a ninety-day suspension of his license. My testimony was purely about my relationship with the young woman, and per the Licensing Board, my testimony was that of a layman, not a physician."

"I had a word with Bill Lawson about you."

"And I guarantee he left out some key details, including the time he called me, as an Intern in emergency medicine, for a consult for a psych patient. That was for a *psych* consult, not a medical consult. I also suspect he left out the true source of his animosity."

"And what is that?"

"He failed to Match for surgery and had to Scramble. The only Residency he could find that would accept him was psych. He had applied to eight surgical programs and was rejected by all of them. According to Brent, the hospital in Detroit where he served his Residency wouldn't hire him as an Attending."

"How do you know all of that?"

"Another hospital physician related that information. It's all accurate. But we're not here to discuss my difficulties with Psych. Can we find a *modus vivendi*?"

"Before I answer that, I need a commitment from you that you will never undermine my authority. You have a reputation as being contrarian, even subversive. Neither of those are conducive to good order and discipline."

"I can commit to that with two conditions. First, that I may always speak my mind in private, and you will listen. That doesn't mean you'll agree, just that you'll hear me out."

"Acceptable. And the second one?"

"I practice medicine my way, within hospital policy. That means if I want to humor a patient who thinks he's been infested by aliens or is a Scientology reject, I'll be allowed to do that."

"Scientology rejects?"

"They believe that the human condition, such as it is, is the result of our bodies being infested with the souls of Thetans who were murdered by the evil galactic overlord, Xenu. Allegedly, he strapped them to volcanoes and used hydrogen bombs to kill them after they were brought to Earth from Teegack."

"You're joking!"

"What would you expect from a religion made up by a science fiction writer?"

"You're unconventional, and I can accept *some* variation in patient interaction, but only some."

"It's mostly about kids," I replied. "Did anyone you talked to tell you my nickname?"

"Yes; they indicated you had a perfect bedside manner with kids."

"Then, if you can tolerate me handing out candy as a surprise reward, not as a bribe, we're good."

"If I have complaints from parents, I'll need to act on them."

"Moms like candy, too," I chuckled. "They usually ask me to produce some for them, too!"

Doctor Wernher actually laughed, which was a good sign.

"My daughters are all chocoholics. Back to the topic at hand -- can you give me eighty hours a week in the ED?"

"Certainly until August 31st, as I'll be training Mary Anderson during that time. Well, I have vacation time scheduled at the end of June because my wife will deliver our daughter. I can be flexible about the days. I also have May 18th for a conference in Indianapolis.

"If you're OK with it, 5:00am to 9:00pm, Monday through Friday would work best. That allows me to attend services on Saturday and Sunday, plus practice with my band. I do have a pair of Prom gigs on May 11th and 12th, but I'll get someone from surgery to cover the evening hours I'll miss."

"I can work with those hours," Doctor Wernher said.

"Starting in September, Doctor Roth intended for me to alternate weeks between the ED and surgery. When I'm in the ED, Mary will work nights; when I'm in surgery, she'll work days. That will mean alternating between a hundred and twenty Surgical Resident hours and eighty alternate weeks. That will augment your usual ED coverage.

"The times when neither of us is on would be covered through the old consultation protocol until we add another Resident. Eventually, you'll always have a surgical Resident in the ED. And none of those are part of your current budget, at least how things stand. You are, in effect, getting free hours."

"That was not in the Residency description."

"That's *my* interpretation of it, and nobody has told me to stop. Well, you did, but nobody from the surgical service. I felt sitting in the lounge waiting for consults

made no sense, so I handled walk-ins and filled in when there were multiple simultaneous EMS transports, and, of course, handled all surgical consults."

"Is it true that, as a PGY1, you've performed multiple appendectomies?"

"Yes. The training program has been accelerated in two ways -- first, a second Residency slot was created; and second, I'm being given the opportunity to do things usually reserved for PGY3s and above."

"That's awfully fast."

"I'm awfully good."

"Spoken like a surgeon. Your evaluations and the input I received from Doctor Gibbs, Doctor Cutter, and Doctor Mastriano backs up the claim."

"It's also the case that I know when to ask for help and know how to not get in over my head. If I didn't, nobody would let me within ten feet of an operating table."

"You're a cocky son of a bitch, Doctor."

"Blame the system. The only way most medical students or Interns are allowed to do anything other than the most basic procedures is by demanding they be permitted, which means making your case forcefully. That *has* to come across as cocky, or it's not going to work. Honestly, Casper Milquetoast would end up doing scut for years. I strongly suspect one of those doctors explained my theory of medical education."

"You do like to do your best to upset the applecart."

"When I see something wrong, I do what I can to right it. Having strong opinions

should not be a disqualification so long as they're expressed properly. I'll make the point that for you to achieve your goal, you're going to express contrarian views and have to be just as cocky as I am now. Whatever happens, I won't try to undermine you. Show me that your way provides better medical care or the same level of care more efficiently, and I'll be right next to you when you try to take the hill."

"I was Navy, not Marines."

"I don't know a proper naval metaphor because 'Damn the torpedoes, full speed ahead' doesn't work. And contrary to the opinion of some, that is *not* my approach. My turn to ask for concessions."

"The lounge and the nursing schedule?"

"Yes. Taking the second one first, let the administration and the Hospital Board fight that battle. The nurses' contract expires at the end of June, and negotiations are ongoing. Make your wishes known to Doctor Nels Anderson, the Hospital Administrator, and let him fight. You'll also need to apologize publicly to the nurses."

"You can't be serious!" Doctor Wernher declared.

"Deadly," I replied. "If you do that and revoke the changes, they'll drop the grievance, and you'll avert the strike. You'll also change the dynamic so you are no longer the enemy. I will have a word with the three most influential nurses and ensure your gesture is received properly."

"I'll think about it."